

If You Got the Power of Flight, Invisibility,
and Teleportation, What Would You Do?

(空を飛ぶ能力と透明になる能力と瞬間移動
する能力を貰ったらなにをしますか?)

Arc 02

Matifa Lau Ell Pito

Tanabeyaki

(田辺焼)

Story Description:

Obtaining the power of flight, invisibility, and teleportation—
Kirishima Ren was sent to another world.

It was a world of swords and magic. I was able to survive in the
seedy underworld using my supernatural powers.

One day, while stalking..... er I mean, protecting stealthily from the
shadows, I ended up raping the princess. While treating my princess
as a sex toy, I became involved with cute girls one after the other.

From manipulating a tomboyish witch, to taking care of a
troublesome cat girl while entrapping an elf sisters. Little by little, I
had reached my hand to the center of the country.

Incidentally, I was able to take hold of the King's weakness and tried
to do anything as I pleased. And now, I'm going to invade the love
hotel... I mean, the castle.

Original Story can be found here: [Link](#)

Chapter 16: Matifa Prologue

I found it. I found it. I found it.

Since when did my heart got this excited? For these past hundred years, it never happened.

I never thought that he would invade my barrier that easily. Furthermore, it's a surprisingly no magic nonetheless.

It's too amazing that my uterus seems to ache.

「Matifa-sama, what's wrong? You look so happy」

I can't I can't. My beloved kitten noticed me. Can't I do something about my feelings leaking out immediately?

「I found someone interesting. Does Misha want to see him too?」

I projected to Misha's eye what I'm watching. A lone black man flew in the sky, he disappeared, then appeared again.

「Who's this?」

「I wonder who. I just found him a while ago. He suddenly appeared inside the castle's barrier」

「A normal human?」

「He's not normal. That human doesn't have magical power. Originally, it's impossible for a zero to exist. Surely, he's a perfect existence」

「Doesn't have magic? Then weak?」

「That might be. He's surely weaker than anyone」

「Fuun」

Misha doesn't seem to be interested. The proof is that she's minding other things is the nekomimi on the top of her head facing the other way.

Rather than that, the problem is him. He's an existence more than what you see. Even he has no magical power, he flew, he disappeared, just what kind of principle is uses? I need to clarify it's true colors. Especially, when he disappears, his existence can't be sensed anymore. This isn't magic, is

it? It's different from a racial trait. I've lived for a long time, but this is the first time I've seen one.

「Matifa-sama is ill?」

「Oops, Sorry Misha. Don't mind me and continue」

「Un, okay」

Misha's rough tongue licks my secret place. Each time I feel the pleasure, I feel numb. I also extend my tongue and licked Misha's secret place too. Normally, that place is a forbidden place to touch as Misha is just 9years old. However, she's just like me. Because this body is just 10 years old.

Even though it's young, it can still feel it. The proof is Misha's childish hole is greedily twitching and trembling. The further I roll my tongue the more her love juice overflows.

「Nyan~ Matifa-sama it feels good. I love it」

「Misha's got obedient. Different from me. Do it Misha. Make me feel it」

「Un~」

Misha licks my genital area. Somehow, it feels better than usual. My head is getting fluffy, and my waist moves naturally.

「Still, Matifa-sama today is weird. Are you really that curious?」

「Sorry Misha. Nnn... When I'm thinking of what should I do about him, I get excited. Nhaa...」

Even now, his appearance is reflected in my eyes. The appearance of the man who lurks in Ms. Seria's bedroom.

Usually, I would try to catch him, but with his abilities it seems he will be able to run away. Rather, I hope that he escapes.

Just what is his origin? I'd also like to try a lot of things on him. What should I try first?

If I throw him in the hellish fires of hell, even he would die. It might be

good to seal him in Ice. But before that, I should perform autopsy first, I need to firmly examine him. How would he react if he saw me? He might get embarrassed to the beautiful me. Or would it be fear as expected?

What's next is, hmmm. It's a waste to throw him away, I might want to get some child. What kind of rough brething he would make? It seems that he has a high sexual desire, he might even attack me.

I can't. My head is getting filled with him. Anyhow, whenever I see him, my womb aches. A man who has no magical power. A perfect man. If it's him, it might be—.

「Ei」

「Aaahn! Misha, that's unfair」

Misha sticks and sucks my clitoris I jumped because of her rough tongue. My head got blank, I can't think of anything.

「Haaan! It's coming. Ah! I'm about to cum! Coming! Cumiiing!!」

I lost my control over my body and shivered from pleasure. Misha's attack on my clitoris make me cum. My insides had gone numb, I wasn't satisfied and I'm aching for more.

This is probably because of him.

「Matifa-sama came. She came earlier than Misha」

「That's right. You and he made me cum. ...Good, I've decided. Misha, your new master is that black haired man」

「Why?」

「He's surely an amazing man. I just had a feeling that he is. That's why Misha, you have to confirm it by yourself」

「Okay, but Misha doesn't want to kill」

「I know. I don't intend to kill him so be relieved. Entertain me more」

That's right, entertain me more. Humans break easily after all. For the time being let's make this cute kitten cum.

「Nyan! Matifa-sama!?!」

「My return gift」

I licked Misha's cute clitoris. Since it still hide itself, I bit the clit then sucked it then bit it again—.

The opening of her vagina convulsed after attacking it persistently.

「Myaaaaa! Thash amazhing! Mi-sha's cumming! Cumiiiiing!!」

I continued licking even though Misha bent back and it was easy to understand that she climaxed.

Misha's tail stood straight and is shivering from the pleasure, then she lost her power and collapsed in bed. This child remembers it quite well.

「Myaaaa. Matifa-sama really looks so happy」

「That's true. I might have fallen in love.」

*

1. Boku.

Chapter 17: Chibi pharmacist Capo

In a windowless dark room. I ran a quill pen on the desk while relying on the candlelight. I'm writing information that that happened and I've obtained in this past seven days.

Of course, I didn't write that I raped Seria. I'll never reveal that.

While struggling on the otherworld letters that I'm not familiar with, I had been writing for more than two hours.

It was already morning. The seven days of travel, fight and the stuff I did to Seria, the fatigue was rushing.

While sipping coffee, I endured a little more writing the parchment.

I'm writing with my brush with sleepy eyes.

I want to finish this as soon as possible so I can investigate the inside of the castle.

I'm the only one who can invade there. But I can only go in and out using teleportation, so I can't do that frequently. I have to do things outside the castle before that.....



PichaPicha

A sound of water. Footsteps...No, it's from the upper area?

That reminds me, my crotch are itchy.

「Is here good?」

...Seria?

「Yes, It's your seria. kiss」

Ohoho!

「*Churu, jurururu...Jubobo...*」

She's awfully active today Did I teach her Irrumatio!

「I've studied. How is it? Juru...」

It's good. Amazingly good.

「Fufu, you can let it out anytime. I'll drink all of it」

Yeah, I'll release it in your throat.

「Yes, Leave everything to me and just rest. Jururu...」

Yeah, Amazing.

「Juru... *Jubobo*...」

It feels good. I'm about to cum soon.

「You can do it anytime. Please release it inside this meat toilet's mouth pussy!」

Yeah, in this meat toilet's mouth pussy...Eh?

「Ren! Ren's penis! Ren's semen! Jubo...Jubo...Juriyuriyuriyu!!」

「Hey, isn't it Cathy!!」

When I noticed, Cathy had sneaked under my desk and she's sucking my penis. It's quite lovely.

It seems that I've fallen asleep before I noticed.

「Kuh...!」

「*Jurururu!*」

Dokudoku I woke up and released at the same time.

Why did I wake up? At least in the dream it was Seria's mouth, I would've been a bit more happy.

「N～Ren, your morning semen is delicious」

Cathy looks pleased about it. Her voice sounds happy under the desk.

「But, today's semen is thinner. Ren, did you attack the princess?」

「What do you mean」

Hey, what criteria did you use? Are you analyzing my sexual life using my semen? Are you my semen manager!?

「Because your penis doesn't taste like you, and the semen is thin, you

did someone didn't you? Then, you were guarding Seria-sama. That's the only thing I can think of」

Yup, that's it.

But, why do you know? I haven't entered the bath yet, but I intend to clean myself properly. The thickness isn't much because it's just a half day after I was emptied, it can't be helped.

But, I won't admit it.....

「.....That's not true」

「Also, you called Seria in sleep」

「.....」

I can't retort to that. The words to persuade Cathy does not come out.

When I hardened, Cathy showed a tired face and sighed.

「It's not that I care. I won't meddle on who you do, nor I will tell master. If you want me I can even help Ren」

It seems like she forgives me. I thank this generous Cathy.

「...Haa, don't tell anyone」

「Of course. But you have to do me too. If you don't, then I'll tell master」

「If you didn't have to do that you're really a nice woman」

Let's put away my son from Cathy for the time being.

Cathy was unsatisfied. But, right now is impossible. I did Seria too much.

「I'm not saying anything」

「Let's postpone today because I'm tired. Today, Just today」

「Ah, neglect play? It's okay. I'll endure to my limit」

「It's not neglect play. ...Well it's fine. So? What are you doing here so early in the morning?」

The day is just rising, and the people above are just beginning their

activities.

「That's because I smell Ren」

「Are you a dog? Then? What's the work?」

「Gosh, you're cold. —Well, it's okay. It's real that I smelled Ren. It's just the eight day after you departed, what happened?」

Cathy changed back to work mode. She straightened her posture, she changed back to the cool woman. It's good if there's no drool dripping from her mouth...

I coped as my head finally woke up.

「We were attacked by someone. It's probably Will Gantt house. The guards were annihilated. I exterminated the assailants too, but I judged that it's dangerous to continue the travel so we returned. I silenced her temporarily」

「Will Gantt house is it?」

「Yeah, they intend to make Seria a puppet just as you reported. They'll get power as much as they can. I think that they're also planning to worsen the relationship with the Misumunto Kingdom. For more information, read what I wrote」

I passed the report I've written before I slept;.

「I read the report Cathy had gathered. It's the conclusion, but I think you should read it. However, there's too many enemies, I can't squeeze it. That's why I will solidify Seria's foothold first. Then, while buying time I will analyze the weakness of each camp. If there's none I'll make one」

「That's true. In this situation, just protecting her from sides won't help. Would assassinating the prince be too early?」

On the fight of the two great marquis, the two prince play the key role. It's easy to crush. I'll just slip inside the castle while they're sleeping and stab them. I can always do that.

But, what's left?

If I were to kill one of the prince, the killed faction's noble would aim to kill Seria.

If both are killed, then Seria would be the next King. That's the development I hope for.

「Even so, we should consider the means. But, it's a priority to reduce the power of nobles」

「However, if you weaken it too much, Misumunto Kingdom might attack?」

That's right, that's the problem. If exhausted from civil war then the outside would attack. In addition, if they focus on outside too much, the interior would collapse. Balance is important.

But this field is master's specialty.

「I know. I'll only do what's possible. In case of emergency, master would stand out」

「That's true. Ren has master as a piece3」

「That's what it is...4」

That's right, I'm sure that master is aware of all that's happening now. With that in mind, I'll just carry things that's convenient for myself It's even possible that me laying my hand on seria is according to master's plan.

It's also probably accounted that Cathy and I would rack our brains.

「There's no use thinking about that person too much. Let's do what we can」

「True」

I agreed to postpone in this regard.



After the briefing session with Cathy, I went out to the town to take a nap.

The town's hot topic was the incident that occurred in the gates last

night. The town merchants, the gossip ladies, the children playing in the plaza, everyone was talking about it.

And, the accomplice is here.

「I'll never forgive the culprit! I'll hit him if I see him. Hey, aren't you thinking of the same thing too Ren?」

「Hell yeah. I'll even pay to find him」

My favorite pharmacy's old man yelled. He's the storekeeper, and a Hobbit tribe's pharmacist, Capo. His arm compounding is certain and his attitude is also good. He's a good guy that even treats me as guest even though I am a No Magic.

「I'm told that when Seria-chan saw the guards she started to cry. She must have experienced something scary. Seria-chan's smile is everyone's treasure. You hear? Well definitely find and punish the culprit! You'll participate that time too!」

「It's obvious. Whatever happens don't get cold feet old man. That said, this is my share today. I'll ask for the usual medicine」

I hand a bag of medicine materials to Capo. Inside is a dried mushroom with magical power and purification effect called Kakyuia.

It's not possible to take it if you didn't enter the deeps of the deadly poison swamp, local specialized hunter drains it into the market, if an adventurer picked it up by chance, it would be circulated as a treasure.

It's possible for me to take them easily because I can fly. That's why, sometimes I pick it up and collect them casually.

Magical power purification medicine can be made from this Kakuia. It has the effect of removing the impure magic that has accumulated in the body, it's for those with weak magical power.

I have to drink this periodically, someone who has low magical resistance, would easily be eroded with a disease.

In addition, there are other medicine that temporarily increase magic resistance, I'm using those medicines and alike.

Instead of me compounding the medicine, I hand it over to Capo. It's convenient to hand it over Kakyuia to Capo periodically than the market which is price is unstable. This is a give and take relationship Before invading the castle today, I looked around the town and thought of replenishing my medicine.

「Yeah, you always save me. The circulation of Kakyuia has been reduced recently. The price is too damn high」

「Yeah, I've heard that. That's why I brought some」

It was listed on Cathy's report. The sudden price jump of magical potion and other related products. This is one of the omens of the civil war that will occur.

This kakyuia is said to be a cure-all material that heals all diseases, it would be exhausted if war happens. And it's a fatal problem for someone with no magical power like me.

「Is that so? Still, your body is sure adapted well. Well done」

「There's no monsters there since the poison is too strong. Also, I have a trick」

So we were talking while waiting for the medicine to finish, Karan Karan the sound of the door bell ringed as the door opened.

「Oji-san, hello! Onii-san too」

「Yea, welcome」

「Hello」

A girl who's covered with broad brimmed hat came. Her pink hair is twin braids tied on the neck part A cheerful adorable greeting.

She's a frequent on this store too. I saw her on the orphanage the other day.

「Oji-san, do you have the usual medicine?」

「Yeah, wait a moment. That bro over there just gave me the materials」

「Is that so? Onii-san thank you」

「You're welcome」

The girl smiled pleasantly.

I hardly feel any magic from this girl. She definitely has the constitution called magic deficiency just like me. In short, a human oppressed human.

「Aren't you always alone? Are you okay when you go out?」

「Yeah, since it's near, it's okay. Onii-san is the same with me? Can you share me the medicine?」

The girl sat on the chair and purapura her feet⁵. I'm worried about her turning to adult.

「Children shouldn't worry. You shorty」

「Wa—don't take my hat—」

When I pressed and stroked her head, the girl was happily squealing.

Since I'm always bloodthirsty, this kind of skinship heals me.⁶ This was my ordinary before.

「You guys get along well. Ren is surprisingly a lolicon. I thought that Cathy was your type however」

「Hey, what do you mean by that? I love all beautiful women, Cathy is a bit different」

If you know Cathy's true nature, you'd hesitate to say you like her.

If I had to say then I prefer Lolis.

「What? It's you have no loyalty. Be careful little lady」

「Okaaay. But I'm not a little lady anymore. I'm even taller than oji-san~」

「What!?!」

The girl jumped from the chair and puffed her flat chest.

She undauntedly stood up against Capo.

I compared the two people.

「Old man's defeat」

「W...hat...」

「Ahem!」

The girl was taller by a narrow margin even if you removed her hat.

No, should I say that Capo was shorter? They're the same if you compared their height anyway.

「Haa, I was surpassed by a child again」

Capo hang his head and resumed his work.

「It's a racial difference. Don't mind it」

「That's right, Also, I'm able to grow thanks to oji-san's medicine」

「Well, that's true」

He got well after two people cheered him up. Well, it's not that he was depressed.

This and that, we killed some time, then the medicine was completed.

「Look, it's done」

「Thank you. Okay, here's the money」

The girl pay money in exchange for the medicine. Capo checked the amount, then he shook his head.

「Thanks for the purchase」

「Bye-bye, see ya. Onii-san too」

The girl waved energetically.

We sent her off then I talked to Capo.

「Aren't you affectionate?」

I watch the coin put in the tray.

The amount is half the usual pay in the market. He certainly won't be able to give it on half price if I didn't harvest it for him. Also, it's quite a large sum of amount to pay for a commoner.

Capo said while cleaning up the mortar.

「I'm a pharmacist after all. I hand medicine for those who are in need.
And since you're giving it to me, I can make it less expensive」

「I see. Then, I'll bring some again」

「Yeah, I'll ask of you」

I also received the medicine and left the shop. Still, that girl from a while ago, I feel like she's familiar but I guess it's my imagination.

Chapter 18: Royal Palace's conspiracy plot tour

The plaza in front of the royal castle's gate. In daytime, it's packed with people.

Some people are sightseeing, some are waiting to enter a castle inspection, and some just use this as meeting place.

But, it was different today. A lot of people have gathered to ask about the incident that happened last night, or rather protesting.

In short, spectators have gathered.

The knights have come out in response, when asked, they just said that it's still under investigation, but they pointed out that the princess is safe so there's no need to worry.

Well, the mobs didn't respond, they ignored them and advanced.

My objective isn't to hear such an obvious story. I came here to invade the castle for the second time.

Teleportation is my trump card. I don't want to use it frequently.

That's why I will try another method of snakingl in.

I used invisibility and went towards the main gate of the castle. There's a baggage wagon carried into there.

The neighboring gate that isn't open unless for time of parade opened it's roadway to let the baggage in.

The wagon advances slowly while the guards are strictly guarding it. And I used my invisibility and followed it.

This passage is covered with layers of magic. Things without permission, poison, curse, they can detect those with magic.

I don't know the stealth performance of my invisibility if it could pass through. Since nothing is perfect, you're not supposed to be overconfident.

I pass through the tunnel that's approximately 10 meters nervously. Somehow, when I felt magical power while passing through, I feel bad, but I can't stop.

When I got outside the tunnel it was snowing and there's a guard, It seems I've passed through safely. That was anticlimactic.

However, the degree of freedom increased with this. Today, we I will properly explore the castle I'm looking forward to see what kind of evil deeds will appear.



I pass through the palace while investigating people's magical power. First of all, let's intrude the same private room as Seria's from the other day.

This time, I peeked from the balcony instead of the entrance.

Seria is sleeping peacefully on the extravagant canopy covered bed.

On her side is Lululie grasping her hand. She seems to have woke up safely.

In addition, the genius knight Lion is standing next to them.

He has a neutral look, his smooth blonde hair is tied from his back. His body is wrapped in luxurious armor, a sword with a divine atmosphere is on his waist, his vigilance of the surroundings and his stance has no gaps. With this, I can't do anything but to give up invading the room.

Lion and Lululie were talking. I listened to the conversation by installing a tool such a glass stethoscope.

「Lululie-dono, Since you've been finally freed from the questioning, how about resting for a moment?」

「No, I'm fine. Taking care of the princess is my job」

「However, your complexion isn't good either. Entrust this to me and take a rest」

「The princess was betrayed by the knights and is shocked, you know I

can't do that」

「That's...」

It seems that she's stubbornly not leaving Seria, Lion is worried about Lululie.

However, Lululie refuted quickly and Lion withdraws. Lion is weak.

As for Lululie, she remembers that the knights betrayed her. That betrayal of the knights was splendid. Once you experienced that, you don't seem to want to be beside a knight.

Lion also knows that so he can't insist himself.

Lululie adds insult to Lion's injury.

「I'm being patient here because you were instructed by the king to appear here, in truth, I want you to leave the princess' room immediately. It was your companions that did it aren't they?」

She completely lost her nerve. It can't be helped to say that Lion is to be blamed for this.

「I feel deeply sorry for that. But, I'm different from those knights that lost their pride. I'll never betray Seria-sama」

Lion denied it flatly. But, Lion, that's a bad move.

「I wonder? Since you're strong you didn't experience that, but if you were cornered aren't you going to betray us surprisingly easy?」

「That's not—」

「To begin with, a man like you shouldn't be looking at the princess's sleeping face. If you would guard then isn't it fine to guard the entrance? Isn't it rude to enter the princess' bedroom?」

「...This is because it's a state of emergency」

「This is the royal palace. Outside is different, but the enemy can't invade here. Besides, you can do it outside can't you? Rather, you entering all the way inside is suspicious. Or is there a reason that you have to watch the princess?」

「I'm not thinking of such a thing!」

「Then there's no problem right? Since you're unrelated please get out」

「...Certainly」

Lion left the room depressed. Since there was a presence that the door opened, he guarded outside just as he was told. Rather than guarding, he look like a student made to stand in the hallway.

Lululie definitely won't lay a hand on her so I don't have to do anything here. I should probably leave Seria to Lululie.

I decided to come back at night, then resumed my search at the royal castle.



There's a room located in a remarkably high place in this royal castle. I was able to look around the castle from this room However, in contrast to the refreshing wind shaking the curtain, there was a heavy atmosphere in the room.

There were three people talking there.

「Is princess Seria still sleeping?」

「Yes, she's sleeping soundly」

The first to open his mouth is the King of this country, Ortiz. His age wasn't at his prime of life, but, fatigue can be seen in his face.

Then the one who answered is the prime minister, Pienta, An gray haired old man that looks tired.

It's not fatigue done overnight. The worries of these two people never ends.

「Is she not injured?」

「Yes. However, the princess can use recovery magic, so it's possible that she used it to heal herself」

「For now, I'm glad that she's safe. However, that's a problem」

「It is so」

The two people sighed deeply.

「A personal letter from Misumunto Kingdom. Let's pretend that she felt ill on the way. Let's see how they move for now」

「That would be fine. If they knew the internal trouble, how will it turn out? The special marriage proposal will be lost」

「That's surely their aim」

「It probably is. Really. People with empty brains can't keep their hand out」

YareYare, Pienta shook his head, Ortiz looks troubled.

「Don't say that. Dealing with it somehow is your job as the prime minister. I understand your feelings, but」

「I'm sorry for being rude.」

「What about the shadows?」

「The communication is cut off. Perhaps they were attacked by the people of Will Gantt」

I want to tell them that those people died without permission. Just how incompetent are the secret agents of this country? They'd be greatly troubled if they knew.

This is because master pulls out the talented people.

「Those guys. They interfered us just to wage war. Those guys would go to war and plunder. What's wrong with being friends with Misumunto kingdom!?!」

Don Ortiz hit his desk. The teacup mad a noise by vibrating.

The woman sitting beside him, Queen Angela rebuked it.

「Calm down dear. Also, we hadn't confirmed yet if it was an act of the Will Gantt house」

「But, there's no one else but them!」

「However, we still don't know how Seria returned safely. In the first place, the report from the event had occurred yesterday afternoon. No matter how fast Seria run, it's impossible to come back here in half a day」

Angela explained how the situation is unnatural.

I did that, but they don't know.

My super ability can't be perfectly reproduced with this world's magic.

Because long-distance flight requires an extraordinary amount of magical power, it's basically impossible. The flying dragons are a race that's able to fly in the sky originally, they're a rare race and normally it's not usable. As for teleportation, it's magic theory isn't complete in the first place.

There's no one who can move a long distance in such a short time other than me.

However, that impossible phenomenon might really happen. That's why I have to understand this situation correctly.

The talk continued without reaching conclusion. I've eavesdropped for a while, but I understood that they don't have good information.

I feel uneasy if the top of the country is incompetent.

I'll just leave them alone and move on the next place.



A dark room where curtains is closed even though it's noon. A lone man was shouting in frustration.

「Dammit! Why did Seria come back!? It's impossible!!」

The man hit the wall to vent his anger. A crack appeared on a magic reinforced wall. He had quite the power3

「Radom-sama, please calm down. You'll break it」

A middle aged man dressed as a knight tries to calm him down. I've seen this face somewhere.

「Dammit! What is that Felix doing! He still hadn't contacted me yet!?!」

「I sent a messenger, but it would take two to three days...」

「Can't it go faster?!」

「I'm extremely sorry」

The first prince Radom shouts his frustration to the old man.

Felix is the name of the present head of Will Gantt Marquis house. He's the top in the military, and he's an excellent knight. His territory is on the west, adjacent to Misumunto Kingdom, it seems that they have returned to their territory today. It's for the sake of kidnapping Seria.

With this, it's concluded that Radom and Will Gantt marquis house conspired this.

「Just what happened!? Why did she come back after the seventh day? Isn't the scheduled attack yesterday? Even a fast horse would take a day and a half on that distance, how did she return in half a day? Also, what happened to the attack? Didn't the maid say that they came back safely together? Why did they return safely?」

He began to kick the floor. He's a totally restless man. If this man become the next king, I'd feel uneasy.

「How is Seria? Did she say about anything!?!」

「No, she seems to be asleep」

「Damn! It's making me puke!」

Radom can't wait and began to walk to the door. The old man stopped him.

「Please wait! If you do something right now, Sir Desire would surely take that opportunity. It's necessary to conceal this instead」

「Don't speak that name in front of me! I'm better than that damn brother of mine, why is he talking like he's going to be the next king!!」

Suddenly, Radom began to rage. He seems to have a complex for his brother⁴. It can't be helped that brothers are always compared, but it's

not that easy if you're a royalty. Or he just wants the king's throne.

「That's not all! The people selfishly want Seria and Lion to be the king! Additionally, getting friendly with Misumunto Kingdom? I'll never allow it! The one who will crush them is me! When I become the king, I'll crush all the nuisance」

「Please do not worry, the only one suitable for the throne is Radom-sama」

「Dammit, I got frustrated just because you mentioned his name!」

Aren't you irritated at your roots? I swallowed my tsukkomi

Radom knocked the man blocking him.

「Guh!」

You won't be let off safe with that incredible strength. Still, he endured it without fighting back.

Ah, I remembered. This old man is Felix's little brother...somehow. If I remember, he has a status as a knight.

「Radom-sama. Please calm down」

「I don't care. Who do you think I am! I'm the next king! I won't forgive what they're doing!」

Radom declared.

Looking at the swelling face of the old man, Radom shooed him and got out of the room.

「I'll be going to the training area. Clean up the room」

The old man muttered in a tired manner, then he used healing magic on himself for a while 「Yareyare, can I have some room to spare?」



「Radom will be ruined」

Daytime is about to end soon. The younger brother drank wine with a woman joyfully.

Second prince Desire is together with the daughter of Mark Newt Marquis, Ophelia. Her loud attitude and evil like ringlet blonde hair bounces.

「Yes, it's a big failure. The one who did that is being talked about. I can't stop laughing as he showed his true colors so fast」

「Really. When I met him and fanned it grandly a while ago, he's already boiling in the head. It looks ungraceful」

「Ohohohoho」6

「Ahahahahah」

Are these guys doing an imitation of bad magistrate?

Apparently, they're laughing at their rival's failure. If you want to thank someone, then thank me.

「Then? How was the attack prevented?」

「Ara? Wasn't it the shadow of this country?」

「I've never received such a report」

「Me neither. ...Father must have done something」

Are these guys really laughing without assessing the information? Are you really just playing?

「Well it's fine, we'll know it soon. With this, it's possible to advance this time. How is the plan going?」

「It's doing well. Since all the royal court magicians and the overpowered witch is with us, it's just a matter of time before completion.」

「Oh, you won over that witch? But her reputation is quite odd」

「She'll do anything for her research. I'm glad that we have the same interest this time」

「If that the case, it might be in time. The day I become king comes near!」

「Yes, I'm looking forward to it」

「Anticipate it」

What's this farce?

A plot done by two idiotic people? ...It's unlikely. Besides, this guy's plan of using the whole country is annoying.

I can only sigh.

This country might be done already.

「I will be writing the details. Thus I will be going for now」

Saying that, Ophelia presented a sealed letter.

「Oh? Aren't you going to keep me company? My Fiancé」

「I'm sorry. I still have things to do. I'll come back at night」

「Yeah, I'll look forward to it」

「Yes, then, see you soon」

When Ophelia left the room, Desire opened the sealed letter and began to read. I sneaked behind to steal a glance too.

What's written there is human experimentation.

It seems like they're making an army corps using beast people. The performance and estimated completion is written in details.

Beast people with features of animal fused in their body. There's an exception, their superior in physical ability, but they're low in magic fitness.

If you released the abilities of the troops, you'd be able to overwhelm the enemy in infantry warfare.

They seem to intend to use it on the civil war that's going to happen.

In this country, the royalty are humans. Therefore, the thought of human supremacy is widespread. They even have a thought to say that humans should rule the world.

Desire and Ophelia belongs to those.

If he becomes the King, the small sub-races that were ashamed under normal circumstances would be in more trouble. It's not a problem for me, but I'm not so sure about the Dark Elf Cathy, Elf Lululie and the Hobbit Capo. This is quite an issue.

After Desire finished reading, he put the document away on the bookshelf. After that, he immersed himself in thoughts with a wine in one hand. He had a serious face, then he slightly grinned, then turned expressionless. Is he emotionally unstable?

I searched for the document which Desire put on the bookshelf on his back, then I found some other similar documents. Since it's special, let's borrow it.

30% of theft happens when you're at home Because you're off guard when you're in your own room.

Let's invade when he's absent and look around. Various things would come out.

I've taken some useful information here. When I was satisfied with the result, I left Desire's room.

Chapter 19: Seria and her night in the royal castle

I entered Seria's room when it was night.

Peeping at the sunset from the window, Seria woke up this time. She straightened her negligee on the upper part on the bed and she was talking with Lululie.

And just like earlier in the morning, I can feel Lion's magical power on the other side of the door.

I wanted to play with Seria if possible, but as expected I have to deal with these two people somehow.

When I thought how to threaten them inside my head, Seria faced the window.

I moved on the position where I'd be seen by Seria.

「Hi...」

Seria made a small scream as if seeing a ghost.

Lululie noticed it and gazed at the window. But, there's no one there.

「Princess, is there something wrong?」

「N-nothing. I was just surprised to see my face reflected in the window. Lululie, I'll be sleeping soon so you can retire today. Look, Lilith must be worried about you so show yourself」

「However...」

「Sorry, I want to think alone for a while. Tell Lion to not let anyone in until tomorrow morning」

Seria forcibly expelled Lululie out of the room. Then, when there's no one else in the room, I appeared once again.

When I beckoned her, she quietly got out of bed and came to the balcony.

「Hey, you're much more energetic than I thought」

「How...are you here?」

Seria was somehow able to squeeze the words while trembling.

「I have various methods. Snaking¹ inside the castle isn't particularly difficult. I came here when you were asleep earlier」That's...

Seria's face turned pale then shed tears. She knows that she's not safe even in her room.

「Be quiet. Lion might notice」

Lion stands on the other side of the door. His overwhelming magic power scatters in all directions, it's foolish to fight him.

It's a fight that's impossible to win. The difference level of power isn't just in sword stabbing and swinging. Even if I used poison, it's meaningless against his magical power.

Frankly speaking, I'm no match. It's useless to fight. It's a waste of life.

I don't even know if I would have time to cast teleportation in time.

「Because...you came here...」

「Of course I will come. I need to confirm if you kept your promise」

「I kept my promise. I never told anyone so please leave already」

Seria weakly petitioned, that appearance looks erotic that it stimulates my sadistic heart.

「You know I can't leave you alone」

「Kyaa...」

I hugged Seria and stroked her back. Then, Seria had settled down a little.

But, she's mistaken. I'm not soothing her. I let her understand by pressing my groin against her stomach.

「Stop...」

Did she find out my intention? She started to tremble again.

The hand stroking her head is lowered, then caressed her exposed chest. When I rubbed it against her thin negligee, her small nipples stood up immediately. At the same time, I massaged her ass.

「Nnn...haun!」

I remember Seria's pleasure points and I won't go easy on her. When I attacked her weak points, Seria put her hand on her mouth and desperately endured her voice.

「NN...a,nn! Please stop」

After caressing her for a while, her skin under the negligee blushed and is sweaty.

I gently reached for her crotch and it was wet.

「Na!」

「You seem to be feeling it well」

I go under her panties and touched her pussy directly. I tried inserting a finger in her vagina and it was accepted smoothly. Her insides are wet with love nectar already and she's tightening on my finger.

I start to thrust as it reminded me the feeling from yesterday.

「Because you're touching it, ahn」

「Be quiet. But if you want to be seen by Lion, I don't mind」

「...Don't...」

Seria said in a weak voice. As one would expect she don't want to be seen doing naughty things with a man.

「Are you not going to ask for help from Lion?」

「...Lion, will die. N~」

Seria said something ridiculous.

No matter how you think of it, it's impossible. The existence of Lion is on a level that I envy, he's a subject of respect and awe.

Certainly, I might have killed more than twenty people in front of Seria,

but I would be troubled going against someone like Lion.

「That's impossible as expected. If lion found out, I'll run. ...I don't know what he might do after all」

「I have a feeling that you will win against Lion」

It seems that Seria overestimates me.

「Also, if I refuse you, you will do cruel things to someone else?」

「You know it well. It might be Lululie, or maybe someone you don't know at all. However, I won't listen to whatever you say」

「That's why I can't send you away...」

「True」

Seria muttered as she gave up.

I affirm her words. Be obedient to me, be my thing. You'll protect others that way.

Seria looked down as thinking of something. Then, she spoke in a small voice.

「But...」

At that time, the wind blew.

Seria's silver hair waved, it sparkled as it reflect the starlight. Seria looked up, and looked at me while trembling in fear.

Her strong willed eyes is directed at me.

The environment suddenly became quiet. Even the magical power of the fearful Lion is off from my consciousness.

This moment, I was surely charmed by Seria.

「Still...I will say this to you. ——Please stop this already」

Seria said it clearly even though her eyes were wet and her voice is thin. Although her words were filled with fear, her will got through.

I stopped my finger in astonishment. I was overwhelmed by this woman for a moment.

Is this the personality of a royalty?

Suddenly, I felt that this girl became an excellent existence.

I became glad at the same time.

Seria is a woman who's not broken in fear.

I don't like an obedient doll. I'm not interested in something broken.

But, I can do her body freely. I want to have my way with a woman who's shaking her head.

Therefore, I laughed and replied.

「I said it yesterday right? I refuse」

This time I'm somehow convinced.

I'll never be able to completely break Seria.

I thought that she was an easy girl before, but she was not like that at all. She's a strong girl to the core.

As I keep violating her by force, Seria keeps refusing me. I thought of how will I violate her each time we meet each other, I thought of how Seria will stop it.

That's the relationship of me and Seria. It has been decided that moment.

「However, I won't give up」

「I know. You're fine as you are」

Any more words are unnecessary. I want to rape her so bad right now.

I put my hands on Seria's panties, then removed it from her legs.

I took out my erect penis.

「Nu...As expected, you don't intend to stop...」

「Isn't that obvious. That's why I came here after all」

「Noo...」

Seria began to weep again. Her personality from a while ago vanished

and her face returned to what's suitable for her age.

I sit down as is, then held her ass.

Seria clinged to my neck. Was she afraid that her feet was floating? The feeling of her voluptuous chest forcing on my chest stirs up the excitement.

「It's a bit difficult to insert」

「Please stop this already」

「Don't leak your voice」

I slowly put her ass down. The glans sinks to her vagina, it's crawling inside Seria's vagina. The penis exposed in the cold night is now clamped hot.

「NN—!!」

「You endured your voice well. It doesn't hurt anymore?」

「...It feels really strange」

Seria answered bashfully. She's quite used to insertion already Still, her vagina tightens up my penis, it feels good.

「I'll be moving」

「...Please take it out」

I ignored Seria's words and began to move up and down.

A night on the balcony, we lift and embrace each other under the starry night²

「Nn...nn...Don't, move... Ahn, Ah...n...」

A lovely voice leaks out every time I thrust her pussy, even so, Seria desperately tries to hide her voice so Lion won't notice.

I'm the same, however the reason is different. I'll get killed if Lion found me. My chance of running is 50/50. However, the thrill is irresistible.

If Seria raised her voice it would be a problem. However, I want to hear Seria's panting voice. I want to challenge it's limit.

Got caught? Or to not be Caught³, life or death?

Only fools bet their lives in sex⁴ But it's fine. I'll bet my life to raise the excitement in sex.

「Na...You look happy」

Seria said when she saw my face. It seems my thoughts are leaking out.

「Yeah, this is great. I've never tasted this thrill」

There's no excitement when you fight to death. That's why I rape her for the pleasure.

「Nnaaa!...even you were...nn, fighting?」

「It's different from this」

「Ah! Is that so?」

「Yup, that's how it is」

Zun Zun⁵ I push up Seria's small vagina. The folds entangles comfortably and draw my penis in.

「Nnn! ...Ah, ah, Ahna!!」

The voice of Seria gradually grows. Lion might hear about it soon, it makes me worried.

The one over that door that has a ridiculous magical power might attack as soon as he see me.

However, I'm a little interested on what reaction Lion would make if he saw this scene.

「Lion will hear you. Or do you want to be seen?」

「No...n...I don't, want to show this to anyone, ahn...」

「Yet you feel unusually pleasant」

「That's not. nnn, it's because you're moving...」

Inside Seria's vagina is overflowing with love nectar, it shows that she's excited. She herself feels that she's accepting a man.

「Do you like getting forcefully pierced by a dick?」

「You wro, nnn!!」

Seria raised her voice so I sealed her mouth with mine. At the same time, the other side of the door was knocked.

「Seria-sama, I heard something, did anything happen?」

It's Lion. He heard it as expected. It seems that he doesn't know the details, but he noticed something unusual.

Seria's body stiffened.

I stopped moving where I and Seria are connected.

「Deceive him」

I ordered on her ears, Seria nodded;

「Seria-sama? Is something wrong? Can I come in?」

「N-nothing happened. I'm...just got outside for a breath of air」

Seria answered somehow while being connected to me. She feigned calm desperately, but her voice is trembling.

「Are you really okay? I heard a voice a while ago. Also, your magical power is in disorder」

「I'm fine, really. Do not worry about me. NN!!」

I moved my waist lightly, then Seria's vagina tightened. A sweet tone mixed in her voice.

「That voice right now!? Is there someone in there?」

「There's, no one, don't. worry!」

When I restarted pumping, a gasping voice was added in the voice of Seria. Her vagina began to twitch finely, I see that she's about to cum.

Seria looked at me with teary eyes. It stirs up my excitement again. I can't resist and pierce my penis deep.

「Aah!」

「Seria-sama., your voice is strange. I'm entering!」

The doorknob is turned. Seria's body jumped up, my penis is being squeezed.

I prepared my teleportation that moment.

「Wait! I remembered something harsh so I'm crying!」

Seria said it in one breath. The door stopped half opened. Our appearance isn't seen yet.

「I don't want this face to be seen. Nn, somehow, please close that door」

Every second feels so long. I know that Lion is hesitant on the other side of the door. Then he answered not long after.

「...Certainly」

Bam The door was closed again. I breathed a sigh of relief, but I did not stop moving.

Then, Seria questioned me.

「Why did you move?」

「It's obvious, because it feels good. Aren't you glad? Nice follow-up」

「Ah! Please stop already, nn...nn, haun!」

「I won't stop. Aren't you getting even more wet when you were about to be seen by Lion? You're about to cum soon right?」

「Don't say that...」

Seria's vagina is twitching as if asking for ejaculation. Trembling different from fear, it was a trembling that coils around my penis. I felt this sign of cumming a lot yesterday.

「Cum without reserve. I'm about to cum soon」

「Ahn, Ah, Ah, ah, Haha, ...nnn—!」

Unable to endure the intense movement of the waist, I stick my tongue to Seria's mouth.

Seria, with a melting expression, entwines her tongue with mine. Her

hands and feet are clinging to me, our bodies stick together.

Seria says no in her mouth, but since she's about to cum, she fawned and it was charming. The body moves without her permission and isn't stopping.

In response, I moved faster.

「Nn—!!」

Seria clings harder. She's near her limit. I'm already at my limit too.

I moved my waist stronger, then the waves surged quickly.

「Nn—!!」

Splurt Splurt Splurt!! Semen entered Seria's insides. Seria's body convulsed greatly at the same time.

Both the top and bottom connections felt pleasant. Seria hides herself so she won't be found by Lion while feeling the body.

After the ejaculation, I separated our mouths.

「Fuua...You came inside again...」

「You're quite used to sex already」

「That's your fault」

Seria arranged the clothes on the floor.

There's no reason to stay here after doing that. Finally, I decided to reveal my true business with her.

「This is a present for you. Take a look」

「A letter?」

「It's not a letter. What happened to you yesterday, what is happening in the castle right now, and what's going to happen in the future, all summarized there. I'm still investigating, but you should be able the situation you're in. After you read them, think over what you would do in the future. If you fail you'll suffer」

Seria doesn't know the current situation. There's one around telling her.

She's merely being swayed around.

She can run and escape before, but she can't now.

I also do not want to be swayed by such a worthless plot.

I can't protect all the time, if possible I'd like her to be able to protect herself. If so, she can overcome situations.

Seria received it timidly.

「Err...I understand. Thank you very much」

「You have more enemies than you think. There's also those from yesterday. Take care」

When I was about to get out of Seria's room, I stopped walking.

I remembered something I was doubting that I wasn't completely convinced.

「That reminds me, when you saw the guards you shouted, but you're calm with me?」

Seria rounded her eyes on the sudden question, then shook her head.

「I'm not calm. When I saw a man, betrayed by the knights...I remember the scene where they were killed. A person might die in front of me again, It's frightening..... But, you're the killer」

Instead of her virginity being taken, the shock of the knights dying seems to be much bigger for Seria. What's that...

「That's a bit disappointing」

My answer leaked out unintentionally, and Seria answered amazed.

「What are you saying? You're even scarier. But you're—...」

Chapter 20: The night attack in the royal castle

I went out Seria's room, then I moved out to get away from Lion as far as possible.

The other side of the door has a magical power giving off an incredible pressure. Actually, I want to be in the bed, but it was impossible for me to invade the interior because of that magical power.

Therefore, I was quite stubborn in front of Seria, but I was scared in reality. I really thought I would die when the door opened. Can I win against him? Just what is Seria thinking?

I honestly want to do more naughty things with Seria, but it's impossible in front of Lion. It would surpass my body limits. If I kept showering from Lion's magical power, my body would be polluted with magical power, I'd collapse and die. The palpitation hadn't stopped yet, my back is still sweating.

I hide myself for the time being and take the Magical power purification medicine especially made by Capo. After a short rest, the effect appeared.

I stared at the sky while thinking of what I should do next.

Even if I say so, I decided where I would go. However, since I don't want to go there I postponed it.

There are three people I must not defy in this country.

First is my master, Second is Lion, and the third is the Imperial court magician who's called witch of supreme time.

That witch of supreme time is rumored to have lived for more than 300 years. She already exists when this country was found as a nation, she receives money as she is the imperial court magician, but she only does as she please and doesn't take any orders.

There was a time where she caught a powerful fantasy class dragon, it

is said that she used it as a sacrifice for an experiment in magic. There's also that time where she didn't like a duke family for some reason and crushed them. When Misumunto Kingdom attacked them for the first time, she was the only person who cut off the state of the war.

Even the royalty can't oppose her. She's an unexploded bomb that's about to explode anytime, I want to leave her without touching as much as possible.

According to the talk of Desire and Ophelia earlier, it seems that this witch is doing human experimentation of fusing beast slaves.

Moreover, according to the material stolen from Desire's place, their first experimental should be completed soon. If they begin their secret maneuvers, I don't know what kind of damage they will cause. That's why I will investigate ahead, if possible I will crush them.

However, the enemy is too strong, that I'm not willing to.

As I was expressing my feelings, the clouds came out and the stars appeared.

When I finally settled down, a shadow appeared in the moon.

The royal castle is covered in pitch black And then, that moment, my sixth sense sound like a bell.

I fly sideways on full strength. In addition to the accelerated flight ability I took some two, three steps distance. zazaza I slide as I land, when I pay attention on the place where I hid a while ago, there's one figure appearing.

It's dark so I can't see well, but the silhouette is of a beast girl. Judging from her triangular ears, she's probably from the cat race.

A golden eye from the darkness is looking straight here.

I thought I was discovered by the guards, but it seems I'm mistaken. She's probably someone on the same job. In addition to that, the security inside the castle is only human. That's why there's only one answer.

「Did you came out from that place? Are you a remodeled beast

human?」

I was about to look for the experiment site, but it seems that they came for me instead. This has the heaviest atmosphere.

「Kill... Black Hair...man...kill!」

「Kuh!」

The girl forcibly attacked. The distance that exceeded 10 meters was cut down in an instant, a line spectrum ran in the night's darkness. There's a trace the girl wielded her nail. It's too fast that I only see the line.

I evaded it using intuition. But, I wasn't able to evade it my arm was grazed. The clothes I wore were blade material proof, but it was cut easily and there was a shallow cut to the arm.

She passed through with a certain kill speed. I threw a knife backhand, her cat ears twitched, then she looked at my direction and dodged by sidestepping.

The physical strength's difference is too much. The girl run one again in full speed, chasing me again. I can hardly evade it.

The sharpness and length of her fingernail is longer than usual, it's abnormal. It is perhaps modified to become stronger.

In addition, her attack perception is too high that I can't land a hit.

It's the worst compatibility.

「You dodged? Don't run!」

The crazy girl attacked once again. Her talk has no signs of extreme hostility.

This place is the corner of the castle, the research building of the imperial court magician is near, no one is around right now. There's an attack barrier around the area, and I've been isolated from the surroundings.

The only one who can do this in the caste is the witch of supreme time. It seems her bad hobby is peeping. If so, then I can't use my super

abilities.

I can teleport when it comes to worst, but that's my trump card. I'll try to run away first.

I hold a dagger on my right hand and prepared a low stance, waiting for the girl. The girl running on all fours flew in front of my eyes, then it jumped aiming her nails on my face.

I bent myself backwards while matching the dagger on her nail and escaped using that chance. The dagger was cut into five parts while scattering sparks. But in that fraction of time, I was able to evade.

I made a backflip and kicked the belly of the girl who is in the air at the same time.

The speed of the girl and the flight assistance was used, the girl turned to a flying cat. 1

The girl's small body was thrown in the air, then she fixed her posture with her amazing sense of balance².

I threw the sliced dagger, the girl deflected it in the air.

However, she didn't seem to notice the wire hidden in the dagger. She's weak against feints.

The wire coiled itself on the girl's foot, then when I pulled it, the girl lost its balance and fell.

I pulled one dagger to stab the girl.

The girl intercepted the attack with her nail and made a shallow cut on my cheek. At the same time, the dagger was sucked in by her neck.

I accurately aimed at her vital point, but it deflected like a steel.

It's not body strengthening through magic. I thought my blade pass through from the strong magic, but I only made a scratch.

Is this the reinforcement modeling of that supreme time witch?

The girl who landed on her feet perfectly put her hand on her neck and looked at me in surprise.

「You're strong」

「Thanks for that. Hey, can we talk for a moment?」

I hope that she becomes a bit calm and try to talk. However, that was useless.

The girl cut the wire on her foot and shouted happily.

「But, I wont lose!!」

She seems to take it seriously. The planar moves of the girl became three dimensional.

She's running around on the trees and the castle wall as she pleases.

From behind to the side, she attacks on where it can't be defended.

I make full use of prediction of feints and evade them all. I threw a knife to obstruct her, then created a wire course. Pretending to dodge to the right then running to the left, sometimes It's impossible to dodge so I roll on the ground clumsily.

The cuts in my body had increased.

I contrast on me who has no composure, the girl keeps speeding up. It's impossible to catch with my eyes. I can grasp her location with her magical power, but I don't know until when I can do that.

At first it was just small cuts on skin, but she starts to cut to the muscles. Is it a matter of time before I get tormented to death?

It's not fun to be seen by the witch, but I can't hold this.

I lowered my posture and jumped to evade the girl.

When I passed through the girl, I hang in the air waiting for purrsuit3

「Myaaa!」

It's reversed. As I move in the air, the girl can't take me down to kill.

I used my hidden flight ability at full force. The extended nail of the girl cut the air and doesn't reach me.

I grasped the hand of the shocked girl, then got on her behind in a

moment. I held her joints and sealed her movements.

「Let go!!」

The girl flails wildly, but I completely sealed her so it's futile. I flew in the sky with my flight ability. I jumped out the barrier while increasing my speed. Then, I turned without killing momentum, adding the acceleration of gravity, we're dropping vertically to the ground.

We're approaching the ground rapidly. Though there's the fear of death, I didn't lower the speed.

「Myaaaaaaaaa!!」

「Don't think bad of me!」

And, before we hit the ground, the girl shouted and kicked.

doon a loud sound and the earth was blown off.

I have cancelled the $V_f = V_i + at$, but I'm unable to stop the $F = m(\Delta V / \Delta T)$ In addition, rolled on a trunk of a big tree a lot of times until we stopped.

My whole body aches. I could've been fractured somewhere.

I observed the ground zero⁶ without letting my guard down

「Funyaaaaa...」

The cloud dust cleared up, then there's a girl rolling her eyes in the center. I might have caused a cerebral concussion. Still, judging from her looks, she doesn't look like injured.

I approached the girl while whipping my aching body. She doesn't look like she's going to attack. I tied her up before it's too late for the time being.

A young girl can be seen near. The age is about ten years old. I thought it was a tiger or leopard from her response, but when I saw her tail and ear, she was an ordinary catgirl.

Originally, the cat girl from the cat race are gentle and timid, but it doesn't apply to this one a while ago.

I wondered and examined her body, then I saw the cause immediately.

There's a dark magic coiling in her body. It's a proof of magic pollution. This magical power is gnawing her body and spirit out of sense.

When I found it out, I can handle it easily. If I make her drink my usual magic purification medicine, the girl's sanity would return to sanity.

I took a small medicine vial from my pouch, then poured it into the girl's mouth.

「...*goho**goho*7」

However, the girl has vomited the medicine. She can't drink well if she's unconscious. She will attack once she wake up just like this. Since it can't be helped, I decided to transfer it mouth to mouth.

I won't hesitate even if the other side is a girl. I held the medicine in my mouth and kissed the girl.

「N...」

I poured the medicine little by little, then she swallowed it. I separated out mouths after the medicine is poured.

She's still unconscious, but she'll wake up soon. Then, that's all.

While I'm at it, I looked for injuries, but there's no problem in particular. Though I threw her to the ground with a considerable speed, there's no fracture. Don't I have more damage?

I pulled the cheeks of the girl for being absurd. It's squishy and soft. While I'm on it, I also touched fluffy ears.

「N~...」

The girl looks like she feels good for some reason8

I played with the girl who doesn't look like she's not going to wake up soon, then a sign of someone appeared from the back. A presence that made my whole body have goosebumps—

「You've finally come」

The instigator finally appeared. I turned around and shifted to battle

mode.

「Don't be so cautious. I came here to praise you on your fight」

What appeared is someone in goth dress and black mantle, it was a girl wearing a black triangle hat. She's the witch-girl. Her long white hair shines on her black clothes. Her face is well featured like a doll, it has a eerie atmosphere somehow. She looks like a 10 year old.

However, her abnormal magical power fitted in her body above anything else.

The magical power amount exceeding Lion's scope. It's something dark that crawled out of the darkness of the abyss. From the way it persistently coils around the body, she's more dead than alive. It's certainly a level of monster that's the same as master.

It's the person that you should never antagonize in this country. ——The witch of supreme time

「You're the witch of supreme time. What's this behavior?」

To my utter cry the girl shook her head.

「I don't like to be called by that name. Please feel free to call me Matifa」

Chapter 21: The first slave

「...Matifa, what do you need from me?」

Matifa kept nodding then began to speak joyfully.

「No, I just thought that you were interesting so I meddled with you. I wouldn't have thought that you're a pervert that enjoys smelling Seria's panties」

「...What are you saying?」

Why does this fellow know that I'm sniffing panties? That was in Seria's bathroom. I confirmed that there's no one around. I was alone in that room. I didn't even tell Cathy about it. That's why no one should know that...

But, as if ridiculing my hope, Matifa began to speak.

「You want to hear the details? Then I'll tell you. That was the evening eight days ago, a single man appeared suddenly in the royal castle. The man appeared from nowhere, flew, then disappeared, then he was running after the first princess Seria. After he invaded the princess' room, he disappeared again when the maid had come. Next, the man appeared on the bathroom where the princess is showering. Then the man picked up the freshly taken off panties of the princess, then brought his face close, then sniffed――」

「Da――! I got it! I got it already so stop. I was wrong. But, don't tell more than that!!」

Shit. I don't know the means she used, but she knows everything. I infer that it's a magic that I can't use. This is why I hate absurd magic.

Matifa laughed as she see me panic.

「That's why you're interesting. That man was enjoying the scent of the princess' panties, enjoying the flavor, he was having a trip in world of delusions while rubbing his crotch, then unexpectedly disappeared from the castle」

「I didn't lick it!! Don't add lies on it!」

Matifa continued to talk with an innocent look. Furthermore, she's making an exaggerated gestures like a drama.

「Well, well, calm down. I still hadn't finished my story yet. What's mysterious is that man has no magic at all, and there were no traces of using magic. I can only think of the events as magic. ——You, just what are you?」

An indescribable pressure is emitted by Matifa. Her silence tells that she won't allow me to lie.

Though, she looks laughing cutely, I feel like I'm being stared by a monster.

However, I can't tell her anything. Therefore I only have one answer.

「I don't know either」

Matifa wants to know my super abilities. I don't even know it either. However, I only use it because I can.

But, will Matifa be convinced by just that?

When I thought about it, Matifa quickly subdued her magic. The pressure from earlier disappeared too.

「Is that so? Then it can't be helped. It's not like I'm going to bite or eat you. I don't intend to arrest a suspicious person so be relieved」

「Is that so? If you're not going to arrest me, then something else? Did you really come here just to praise my victory?」

If you know what I did eight days ago, then you should be aware of today too. I don't understand her reason to overlook me.

Despite that, Matifa declared indifferently.

「That's true. Misha is strong isn't she? I just ordered her earlier but it seems she enjoyed it. Misha is my work of art that I have confidence in, but I didn't think that she would lose. Even this child has a B-class physical strength. However, just physical strength is useless isn't it? She

has no techniques, and since she lost her calm, it's easy to turn the tables. No, since your attack can't pass through, I thought that you would win even if I closed up the barrier and escape route, so I stepped in. I truly admired the attack that you did to defeat Misha. It was wonderful」

「...Thank you for that」

Matifa spoke in one breathing then clapped her hand. However, why do I feel that I'm not being praised at all?

This cat eared call seems to be called Misha.

She said that Misha has a B-class physical strength. Just how was it evaluated in actual combat response?

The battle ability evaluation is commonly used to evaluate the battle ability of an adventurer or a knight. Common knight are D-class, Imperial guard is a C-class, and lastly, those with official position like a captain is a B-class. By the way, Lion is A-class A-classs is a class that's already called a monster, there's a gap below the B-class.

In short, Misha is still not ten years old, yet she equal to a trained skilled knight. Thinking that this will attack the corps, Just how much threat they will make.

I won because Misha simply has no technique. She's deceived by feints, she doesn't seem to be fixated on winning against me and was just playing.

The difference between deciding victory and defeat is the tactics, My ability has not reached B-class I only have the strength of a D-class, except when I use my super abilities, which makes me C-class.

When she stopped clapping, Matifa continued her story.

「I'll give you a reward for pleasing me. You can take Misha. It's a slave, a slave. You're a man so you like it right? Misha is cute. She's docile and obedient, a good child. She hates to lose, but bear with it. She can do cooking, cleaning, washing your clothes, she can help you with your daily needs. Of course, even at night. She meows when teased, and she's sensitive too. She's a bit young, but you like it right? Ah, be relieved. I

trained her for a bit, but Misha is still a virgin. Her hymen is clean. She's strong as you've experienced. She won't hold you down. If you want it she can be stronger. If you buy her from a slave trader, 50 gold coins would be silly. If you let her grow a bit, it would reach a hundred gold. I want to go along with you. How's it? would you receive it?」

Matifa listed her words like a salesman.

If I was asked if I want a slave, I will answer without hesitation. However, if I believe Matifa's words, Misha is a no good anymore.

But I don't know what this witch is thinking so should I trust her? If I take her, would this girl kill me on sleep?

...Let's try asking her a leading question.

「Isn't Matifa affiliated with the second prince Desire? If you know me, then you also know my purpose, right?」

My objective doesn't agree with Desire's Although, I don't care if Desire became the king, but if Desire is an enemy of Seria, then he's also my enemy.

And, Matifa is currently in the Desire and Mark Newt faction right now. I don't know her reason to overlook me and even help me.

「Yeah, that one? It's true that I cooperate with Desire and Ophelia, but our contract is only me handing the results of the research. Misha is just one person so there's no problem. In addition, I'm opposed for him to become the next king. I don't know what he's saying, but he won't be the next king. The two sons of Ortiz are exceedingly heartless. I recommend Seria as the next King. That's why I want to help you by all means」

Matifa relies on me. However, that's a misunderstanding.

It's not like I intend to make Seria the next King. Rather than being the king I want to make her mine. I don't mind having someone I don't know being the king, if Seria became the King, she'd be forced to work her duties. The suitable one is Lion, my bet is on Lion. In that situation, I'd be troubled.

I want to grasp the weakness of the next king in hope that Seria can live in the royal castle without getting sent off to marriage. If that time happened no matter what, I'll use a husband puppet applying for the family name, but the real married person doesn't exist. My goal is to go to that extent.

But, it seems that Matifa is serious. In the first place, Matifa intends to kill me, so she can just use force here. Though I will run away alone. Is she giving me Misha to prevent that?

Thinking about the various ideas is a pain in the ass. She loves to talk, so it's probably better to throw a straight ball.

「I'm telling you this already, my intention isn't to make Seria the king. Also, I don't understand the reason why you're going to help me. What's your real objective?」

When I asked, Matifa put her hand on her chin and thought.

「Fumu, it seems you're on guard. Well, it's natural. Then, I'll tell you honestly. My interest in this experiment had already moved to another thing. That's you. I want to know about you. From a piece of our hair to the drop your blood, I want to know everything about you. When did you begin to have that ability, what theory does it have, how you manage that ability. What's the true nature of that ability? Why does that ability exist. And, what are you doing with that ability. I want to know everything about that. It's not an exaggeration to say that my heart is already captured by you.

However, your power isn't decisive enough. That's because you can't live in this world that's filled with evil spirits² Furthermore, I can feel that you're being called by a ruining desire. That's why I'm troubled. What's why I lent my power to you.

In reality, after taking your combat data with Misha, I was planning to catch you to look up, but I changed my mind. I want to see how far can you go. However, it would be unfair if i help you out directly, so I will give the one you knocked down, Misha as a present. How's that? Did my feelings get through?」

From what I've heard, it's just a declaration of love. However, appearing and disappearing on my back is an abnormal attachment³ She surely won't let me go, she'll observe me struggling from every corner She might have given me Misha for free on her whim.

「...I want to hear Misha's opinion. It was futile to ask her when she attacked earlier after all」

「True. Compatibility is important. If she got conscious, you should talk to her clearly. I'm sure you'd be pleased with it」

When I turned back, Misha's radiant golden eyes is watching me quietly. She cut the wires while I was unaware, and the frenzy a while ago disappeared, she's sitting quietly.

「Can I talk to you?」

「...Yeah. Misha will become your slave」

Misha doesn't look like she hate it. On the contrary, she looks like she's happy.

I love cute cat girls. I want to play various things with her. But...

「Are you really okay with it? Just to tell you, I'm a scum. I'll forge you to be a murderer. I'll even rape you」

I emphasized that I'm harsh. I would be troubled if she said no, if she resisted It's unlikely that I win.

「It's okay. I'll do as Master say. I'll do my best in work!!」

Misha's eyes are happily sparkling. Since she was trained by that witch, I thought that her common sense was blown away, isn't this a little abnormal?

「Why do you look so happy?」

「Master is strong and cool! Also, you made me drink medicine. Misha is okay being Master's slave!」

She seems to like me because of that. It's like a grade school girl that fell in love with a fast runner boy.

Also, the purpose of making her drink medicine was to gather information, but...

No, in the first place, she might be thinking that I treat her better than Matifa.

With this suspicious witch, it's possible. Furthermore, since she did human experimentation the possibility is higher.

「Do you hate Matifa's place?」

「I don't hate it. However, the experiments hurt so I don't like it」

Misha frowned slightly. However, I can't see the true feelings why she hate it.

「OH? What did they do?」

「Unnn... I don't know」

Misha answered downheartedly. The big ears in her head faced down apologetically.

「Hahaha, It's impossible to find out about me from questioning her. My research isn't on a level where that child can understand. How is it? Even if you can't trust me, Misha should be okay. That child is a slave that came to my place without knowing anything, that's why you shouldn't worry. Misha seems to have taken a liking to you」

Before I knew it, Misha already curled her back, when Misha stood up, she pressed me in one go.

I thought of refusing, but when I saw Misha's expectant eye, words don't come out.

And suppose I refused it, I don't know what Matifa would do next. I know too well that she's a monster that's on Master's level that doesn't follow common sense. If I unskillfully displeased her, my life can't be guaranteed.

I can't do anything but to get on it.

「Okay already. Best regards, Misha」

「Uhn, best regards!」

I stretched my hand, and Misha grasped it happily. Thus, I obtained my slave.

*

1. The author must have misspelled Seria to Misha.

Chapter 22: Witch girl Matifa's semen exploiting lesson

「Now then, since this matter has settled, I'll give this to Misha」

Matifa took out a choker with a small jewel.

「When invading the hall, you should wear this. It's a convenient item that can let you pass through this castle barrier. With this, you can freely enter the main gate from the wall. Hey, you should put it on her. A slave contract magic is included in it incidentally」

I received the choker from Matifa and coiled it on Misha's neck. No matter how you look at it, it's a pet cat collar.

「You passed this easily. Isn't this a valuable?」

「That's true. It's valuable that only one exist in this world. Because I just made it right now」

「What a load of bullshit」

Why are you making accessories with such valuable effects in your spare time? If you do that, the craftsmen would be driven to close their business.

「Don't say that. I had some trouble reaching all the way here. ——Oh is that so? Could it be that you want it too? It looks like there's some restriction and risks on your power right? The risk of the disappearance is mental damage. This is related to the time you disappear right? However, there's no mental damage during the invasion 8 days ago. The way I look at it, there's another ability. But you have reasons why you don't use it much often. How's it? Was I right?

This fellow is tricky. She read my abilities easily.

I was mortified but the apprenticeship is different! This should be expected from someone who lived for more than 300 years.

But, If I can't keep it as a secret, I'll maximize it's use.

「You're correct. I want to have one too. It's true that I can pass through the barrier but doing it every time is a pain in the ass」

「N, Are you thinking of something rude?」

Matifa's cheeks bulged. Despite the cute appearance, a hateful magic is leaking.

I hastily followed-up

「I just thought that Matifa is a cute and an amazing girl. Leaving that aside, can you give me one?」

Matifa breathed out air, I felt that she lowered her arms. That's was fucking scary.

「Well it's fine. Let's see, is this good for you?」

When she said so, Matifa teasingly laughed and reached for her skirt.

Then, a pure white panties was taken down from the inside smoothly. She pulled it from her legs, then presented it to me.

「I'll give this to you. If you wear this on your head, you can slip through the castle's barrier. Yes, you can wear it as underwear too. However, it's no good if you just put it in your hands. How's it? You're glad?」

Matifa presented her panties while smirking. The underwear is filled with frills and has a small lace.

She told me to put this on my head? That's like a punishment game. For a moment I thought that it would be nice, but I can't bring myself to do it on a daily basis.

「Wait. It's too early for me. I have yet to throw my pride」

「Are you dissatisfied? Then I'll throw an extra. With this, you'll have unparalleled energy. Even girls are saying 'hihii' and get pregnant, your penis will never run out of juice」

「That's just a mere pervert! Don't put that effect!」

What does this one want me to be? Does she see me as a pervert that much?

「You're too demanding. Then, this is the last one. If you wear this the wounds in your body would be healed. Your physical strength is restored incidentally too. I think you should save this for emergencies」

「What?」

「Well, don't knock it till you've tried it. First, let's heal the cuts in your body」

Matifa opened her panties with her two hands and slowly slide it. I was worrying if I should run away, or I should receive the it obediently. Yup, that's good. Let's receive the panties Let's do that.

But, my decision was too slow.

「I can't move!」

「Sorry but I restricted you using magic. But if you use force, you can get through」

Certainly, If I used force I can get out. But, I feel that I will lose.

Also, isn't it dangerous to use my abilities in front of her? Even if I got lucky this time, she'd make a measure for the next and I would have a bad time.

Let's set it aside for the real trouble.

「What, aren't you going to resist? Is it okay for you to put my panties on you?」

Matifa reached my front, then used both hands to cover my head.

If this continued, I'd be covered in her panties. I feel like I'm going to lose something important if I do.

「Wait! Before you put that you must absolutely hear this!」

Matifa stopped moving when I shouted. This is my last struggle, so I raised my voice.

「Why is it white?! Your clothes are red and black! Is that really your fresh panties?!」

「.....」

「.....」

Silence ruled the place.

Matifa is blinking in surprise, while Misha's mouth fell open.

However, I must make this clear. Black goth, black panties. That's common sense. Red is barely okay. But, if it's white then it should be pumpkin print panties. Yet, why is it a white lace?

The one you're going to cover me, is something you made with magic and you didn't actually took off your panties, am I wrong?

If you want to know why, it's because I'm black haired. Black panties doesn't stand out in black hair.

Furthermore, someone who presents her own panties to a man is just a nympho. She must have at least a slight sense of shame.

That's why, Matifa created that white panties.

「...Fuu, ahahahahaha! Of all the things, that's what you're going to ask? Very well, I'll answer you. It's as you say, I'm using a black lace」

「Then, that's not the panties you're wearing」

「That's wrong. This is certainly the panties that I was wearing. However, I changed it to white using magic to match your black hair. You don't have to worry about something like color」

「Wh...at? Then you're saying that it's certainly your panties? But it can be said that the biggest identity of your panties, which is color is lost? No, but...」

「You're too persistent. Look, it's done」

When I noticed, my head was covered with panties.

「A——! What have you done!」

「Ahaahaha, Misha, look at him. Look at the pathetic face! This is your new master」

「Uhm, Misha is master's ally!」

Misha is really a good child. On the other hand, Misha's abnormal character is a waste on her cute face.

Shedding tears while imagining her girlish appearance, my crotch feels sudden discomfort.

「This seems to work now. Your penis seems to be energetic as well」

Matifa looked at my groin and began to stroke it on top of the clothes.

「You, did you really add the unparalleled energy effect!？」

「Isn't that obvious I'm a witch you know? A witch keeps the contract by all means. That's why I put all the effects I said a while ago so be relieved」

She said something outrageous.

「Wait, release this magic. Take off the panties.」

「Don't say something so cold. After all the trouble I did just to play」

「S-t-o-p!」

Matifa ignored my cries and happily took out my penis from my shorts.

It's already erect because of magic, and pre-cum is already expected to flow forward 「Misha, this is my last lesson. I will demonstrate it so watch carefully」

「Y-yes!」

「Don't ignore me!」

Matifa began to squeeze my rod while wearing black gloves. Her perfect use of power makes precise stimulation and it feels good.

「Isn't this quite an excellent thing? The length and thickness is bigger than norm, if you got violent it might damage a woman. The hardness is good too, and the shape is well. The vaginal walls sticking to it would feel good」

「FumuFumu」

「Hey! This isn't the time to be criticizing a man's thing! Misha, stop

listening and help me!」

「Err...」

I feel that my pure heart is being trampled. Why did this happen!?

It would have been good if Misha is flustered. But, Matifa doesn't care.

「Misha, you don't have to listen to an impossible order. Other than that, let's continue the lesson. You remember the sensitive point of a man right?」

「Yes~」

「You have to stimulate it this way...this happens」

Matifa began to stroke my penis with her hand. In addition her other hand is holding my glans, rubbing my sensitive part.

She's captured the weak point of a man precisely and quickly, then moving the gloves with a smooth texture, In addition, with the effect of the unparalleled energy the feeling of ejaculation rose up in no time.

「OOooo...Coming!」

I can't endure it and released my semen. The black gloves of Matifa caught the my cloud of children. She didn't let any spill and fall to the ground It didn't even take one minute...

「Oooh!」

Misha was fascinated by the spectacle. ——This humiliation2

「Don't 'oooh'! Help me Misha! Why are you getting familiar with me, Matifa!」

「Me? that's because I'm a witch. In this experiment, sperm is necessary, and so I will exploit a lot of semen. Fresh is better」

This girl said exploiting semen!

「That's quite a treatment! Are men just livestock to you?」

「No, should you tell that to yourself? You just did Seria a while ago, am I wrong? I'm just giving an innocent boy a sexual lesson. And everyone is

satisfies, I'll go back. I obtain my materials and I will be helped. Look, there's nothing bad isn't it」

「Ugu」

Dammit...I can't retort

Meanwhile, Matifa fills up a small bottle that she got somewhere. She licked the remaining drop on her palm at the end.

「Yup, it's has a man's scent. Now then, Misha, it's your turn next」

After satisfying and silencing me, Matifa gave the place to Misha.

Misha asked Matifa on how to do me.

「But, master told us to stop...」

「Oh, that, you don't need to worry about it because he didn't mean it. He should already disappear from this place if he really wants us to stop. With your master's power it's possible. But he's not doing it, your master is waiting for you to make him feel good」

「Master, is that true?」

Misha looked up at me uneasy. You won't face someone who's face is covered with panties and his penis erect.

If she don't she might cry. I like to make women cry, but it's not my hobby to make children cry.

Act blindly!

「It's true. Do it Misha」

「...Okay~!」

Misha's hand stretched to my cock while laughing suddenly. Her squishy hand firmly grips my rod.

The power is stronger than Matifa, it still feels good. She pressed the point well.

She began to move her hand back and forth.

「How is it? Master」

「It's good. Where did you learn it?」

「Matifa taught me」

「Did you play with a boy together?」

「No, just the method」

Well, what does that mean? It's impossible to grow from matifa...grow?

「Matifa, you're a girl right?」

「What are you asking so suddenly. I'm a genuine girl!」

Sorry to say Matifa, but you're not a girl acting your age. 3

「I just thought that you can do something about it using magic」

「Since Misha is interested I helped and trained her. Don't worry, since the beginning I'm a real thing」

「Is that so? Then it's fine」

While I was speaking with Matifa, Misha continued to move her hand. I can't deny her lack of experience, but the technique was certainly inherited. My penis just released just a moment ago, but the magic is filling up one after another, and it's ready to launch again.

「Misha, I'll release it. Receive it through your mouth」

「Okay!」

Without any resistance to my order, Misha followed it immediately. dopyu dopyu a cloudy liquid plunged inside the mouth that has a fang.

Misha caught it to the last drop, aahn she displayed the semen I released 「It's okay to drink」

Misha drank up the semen when I ordered her to do so. She's trained well.

「How's it? Did you like Misha and my panties?」

「Aside from Matifa's panties, I like Misha. I'll receive this thankfully」

「Then it's good. Since you healed your wound, should we change locations?」

...? Change location? It's not the end⁴?

「I thought you're going to release me?」

「I had a change of heart because you were interesting. I'll offer you a place so make sure that we're both satisfied. Look, come here.」

Matifa said and she began to walk, my body started to move without my permission. With a panties on my head like a certain rider⁵, I followed Matifa like a puppet. I seem to have no free will.

Misha embrace my arm while walking. She's behaving a spoiled child as she press her small breast that's starting to swell.

I really don't understand why she liked me. Do the beast people have a tradition where they obey if they lose?

Or is she seducing me to make me treat her good as a slave?

Well, she's cute so it's fine.

We soon reached a research building and gone upstairs. I was nervous that I would be found my someone, but I didn't see anyone. This research building is exclusive for Matifa.

Then my body finally became free after we entered the second floor.

Chapter 23: Witch Girl and Cat Girl 3P

Part 1

There's only one thing to do after my body became free. I took off the panties that's covering my head.

「You took it off already? It suits you quite well」

Matifa complained looking dissatisfied. But a man who's happy having his face covered with panties is just a Hentai

「Give me a break. Rather than that, we're going to continue right? Misha, come here」

I strip Misha's clothes as starter. Even if I say that, it's just a slave cloth with one hole so she just need to raise her arm.

When I took her clothes off, Misha's young limbs become bare.

The flexible muscles peculiar to beast people has a wild charm. Her chest only has a point but it's beginning to swell.

I thought Misha's hair is black, but when I saw it in an well illuminated place her color is bluish purple just like a dawn sky. A big cat ear appears from her short cut hair. When I remembered the feeling when I touched it, I moved to flap it. Very interesting.

「M-master?」

「Oh, sorry. It's because you have a good hair」

I stroke the head of the perplexed Misha to fool her, I continued and reached out for her panties. Lowering the low-rise panties in order to avoid the tail, a hairless land appeared.

「Hey you, don't just be preoccupied and play with me too」

After stripping Misha, a sulkish voice sounded. What I found is Matifa sitting on bed and puffing her cheeks bored.

「No, Matifa has no panties right? Aren't you prepared already?」

「Oh, that's it, so that's how it is. But, I think you can just show a bit of

interest in my body right?」

「To be honest, I don't know how to strip that Gothic Lolita Dress」

Matifa wears a black goth loli dress and her clothes are frilly. A man like me can't imagine how to put it on nor take it off.

「For the time being if you pull out the ribbon on my back, it will come off. You should study this well」

「Is that so? Then allow me to study now」

I worked hard to strip Matifa. But the complex structure of Matifa is easier said than done. After struggling, I was somehow able to expose her chest.

「That's because you're not observing the structure well. I'll ask you to do better next time」

Matifa remarked. Why should you be preachy when on stripping clothes? 2 This loliba—.

「You say something?」

「Nothing」

However, I feel in awe when I looked at Matifa once again.

I can say that she's doll-like, Matifa's beauty is like a doll itself.

Her face parts are arranged perfectly, blue eyes like jewels, straight gray hair with no split ends, white skin like ceramics, a line representing the girl's peculiar danger. Everything seemed to be an imitation, but it was certainly a body of human.

「How's it? It's beautiful right? Because I can rejuvenate using magic, this face and body is born. Do you understand that this is the best happiness from holding such a beautiful girl?」

Matifa said filled with confidence. She can really be confident with it.

「Yeah, I can't object with that」

「Matifa-sama is beautiful as expected...」

Not just me, but Misha is also charmed by Matifa's beauty.

My body is naturally drawn and I kissed Matifa.

「N— you're quite aggressive. It's a good thing. Men should lead at such a time」

I pushed Matifa down to the bed and crept my hand on her small body. The fresh and young skin sticking to my fingers feels good. Her chest is a bit fluffy, when I touched it it returns a squishy sensation. A pink small bud is picked up and stimulated kindly.

「Nn~ You're polite despite your appearance. Others jump in when they see my body. Oh, a child with no delicacy will probably return」

「I intend to be gentlemanly for the time being」

「Ahaha, what a funny joke」

I'm not going to tell her that I'm familiar with Seria. No matter what, they'd rage if they hear another woman's name.

「Do you really bring men that frequently?」

「Don't say that. It's almost 200 years since I did a real thing. I found a promising boy that time and taught her how to sleep with women. That child seems to be happy with another woman after becoming a hero. Though I say that the child whom I trained hard wants it more recently, with that said, I'm not so cheap to let you do it. Even though I look like this, I'm a person with good moral. Since you're interesting and I'm having future expectations so I permitted you especially」

The digit was ridiculous. She surpassed the human life-span as expected. But, I don't understand how old Matifa is.

I feel that she's just 2 or 3 years by me. 3

「I'm honored. Enjoy it by all means」

「You too, feel me」

Matifa is surely thirsty. In the first place, Matifa's personality is out of standards that there's no matching man. Even if there's one, it's just in

appearance. You can't get away with just laughing and talking to each other.⁴

For that reason, she likes me who took a life threatening practical joke without escaping.

I reflect on what I handled sloppily some time ago and caress Matifa seriously.

I feel bad on leaving Misha to wait, but then Misha also participated.

「Misha will join」

Misha licks the free nipple. Since it's rare, I did the opposite side and her nipples gradually got hard.

「Nnn~! You two work smoothly together.」

Matifa leaks a pleasant voice. I was uneasy because her body is too young, but it seems that she can feel it properly.

My hand reaches to her forbidden area and invaded her zettai ryouiki⁵. She didn't resist even if I rub her inner thighs, when I touched it, it was a little wet.

She also has a childish slippery pussy like Misha. I pat her genital as a greeting kindly.

「Haan! It's good. Touch there more」

「Where is 'there'? If you don't say it clearly I won't know」

「That's the place where you're mean. That's my pussy. Will you touch my pussy more?」

「Your wish is my command」

I rubbed it bit by bit just as she told me, then finally a sweet voice leaked.

「Fuua! Haa! Un, that's good. Somehow my body got hot. You can go a bit more violent you know」

I understood her indirect demand and speed up my finger's movement. I exert some force on her slit, then rub the labia that's been hiding. In

addition, love nectar began to leak as I stimulate her clitoris with my thumb.

「It got wet」

「Un, your hand feels good after all. If you'd like should I do it too?」

「You just did a while ago. It's my turn this time」

「Is that so? Then I'll leave it to you」

Matifa's handjob made me cum instantly so I'll refrain for now.

I left her chest to Misha and took off the clothes and moved between her legs.

I spread the legs that's been wrapped with knee socks, then her white skin and a perfectly closed genital area appeared under her skirt. The white and black contrast brings out the spice.

When I opened the meat kindly, the labia and a small erect clitoris appeared.

I peeled her clitoris and rubbed it with my finger directly.

「Aaaa! That's, that rhythm! Do it more!」

In response to Matifa's demand, I raised the level of caress.

I let my finger invade her small child hole quietly. Matifa's small hole swallowed my finger smoothly, sucking it tight. I grind inside, it loosened a bit.

Meanwhile Misha is fiddling with Matifa's chest. She sucks on left and right alternately, fiddling with her finger, then licks it with her tongue. She's quite used to it.

Is Matifa gradually feeling it? Her breathing turned rough.

On her entrance, it's flapping seemingly filled with desires, when I added a second finger, the love nectar increased quickly.

She's probably close to climax.

When I bent my finger and rummaged her vaginal wall, she raised her

waist.

「Haaaa! Haa—haaa—! It's good, you. You're more skillful than I thought. I never thought that you'd make me feel good so easy」

Matifa seems to feel quite good. She clench the sheets firmly with her small hand and her eyes' gaze is in trance.

It should be fine.

「Matifa, I'm going in」

「Nnn! ...Your timing is huge? Fufu, you're quite a brute aren't you? —It's fine. Mess me up with your cock!」

「At times like this you should beg for the penis!」

I opened Matifa's legs wide then forced my glans on her small vaginal hole. As expected, with her body size it's quite tight. Still, I crack open Matifa's small entrance and embed my dick little by little.

「Nuuu! It's really big! And it's hot! Ahahaha, I'm getting broken!!」

「I won't stop anymore. Just a bit more so endure it」

「Okay! Hurry up and give me!」

Matifa clenched her fists on the sheets enduring something.

I pushed my waist steadily and the tip settled somehow. From there, I pushed my meat through and got further inside.

「Uaaaaaaaaa! It's coming in! Your penis! This is no good! I can't endure this! Cumming!!」

Matifa's body shook as she feel she got penetrated. I stopped and thrust the remainder quickly 「Aaaaaaaaaaaaaa!」

After I reached the deepest, Matifa climaxed. Her small body jumps, and her small vagina shrinks further.

「Do raw dicks feels so good after your first time in 200 years?」

「Yes! This is what I wanted!」

The walls of her vagina tightens around my cock.

I haven't inserted all yet but it seems impossible to take more. Let's accept and settle on this loli hole.

「Master...Misha too」

While feeling Matifa's loli hole, I heard a lonely voice next to me. A wistful Misha can be seen there.

「Come here Misha. I'll do you by hand」

「Okay~」

While inserted into Matifa, I beckoned Misha to kiss. Misha willingly included her tongue.

「Nn...*Chupa*...*Chu*...*Pichu*...」

I crawled my finger on Misha's round ass and genital area, it was wet already. Just like what I did to Matifa, I slid it and stroke to loosen it.

「Nmyaaa...Master's hand feels good」

Misha's face is melting from pleasure. While fiddling with Misha's loli pussy, I want to be stimulated too.

「Matifa, I'll move. Endure it」

「Haa, haa... Fufu, Even though I just came you're going to move already? Okay, it's fine, come here」

Matifa's pussy got dripping wet, there's no more trouble to move even if it's tight. I moved my waist slowly, her folds sticks tights and it feels good. When I intensified my movements a bit, Matifa screamed.

「Haaaaaa! aaaaaa! Amazing! You're amazing! You're forcing my vaginal walls, it's been a while since I felt this! Haa! Haa! Haha! I just came a while ago but I feel I'm gonna cum again immediately!」

「Haa, I won't stand for long, so just cum as you like」

「Okay! You're the best as expected !! I want to take you away from Seria!」

Matifa shakes her waist while saying so. I rotate my lets to suit with the movement of her waist according to her movements.

「That's impossible. I have no intention to give up Seria. However, If it's Matifa I'll think about it」6

「Fufu, that's already fine. You healed my suffering after all」

「Even if I declare you as a mistress you won't get angry? If you're okay with it, then I'll be your partner anytime!」

Matifa may be apathetic. I wonder if she has that mind because she lived for long.

「Nn...Master, I'm feeling numb again」

Misha seems to begin to feel it too. When I stimulated her underdeveloped clitoris, her reaction was different.

「Nnn! It feels good there!」

「Do you know what this is?」

「Yes! Clitoris! Matifa taught me!」

She seems to be taught about it too. Just how far did you go?

「Then you do know what to do right? Do it to Matifa」

「Okay!」

Misha extended her hand on the part where we are connected and reached to Matifa's genitals. And pinched the clitoris without hesitation.

「Haaaaa! I'm feeling from my clitoris! Misha! More! Do it more!」

「Nyaaaaa! Misha too! Master, please!」

I surge into Matifa's vagina intensely. Attacking them both at the same time, Matifa's doll-like face is enchanted, and changed into a lewd girl.

A finger shoved in and opened Misha's unripe vagina.

My limit is close already. I moved my waist faster.

「I'm about to cum! I'll let it out inside your vagina」

「It's okay! Come! Come inside my vagina!」

「Misha too! Cumming!」

I go on my last spurt.

My waist and hand attacked without holding back.

「Guu! I'll ejaculate! I'm gonna blow!!」

「Haaaa, hurry up and make me dirty!」

Matifa clinged and put force on her feet. Her vagina shuts hard at the same time and the sperm welled up came out at once.

I thrust my penis inside her small vaginal hole until I reached my limit, Byurururu my burning desire was spit out.

「Coming!!」

「Aaaaaaaaaa! It's coming! Something hot is coming inside my vagina! Ah, I'm cumming again! Ah, Ah, Aaaaaaaaaaaa!!」

「Nyaaaaaaaa!」

Matifa and Misha climaxed at the same time. My penis and hand is being clamped that it hurts.

I stared as Matifa's body reached the climax of pleasure.

「Haa, haa, haha, you let out a lot. ——Would you kiss me?」

Matifa acted like a spoiled child and project both of her arms I kissed her deeply while being connected.

「*Chu*...*Churu*...*Picha*...*chupa*...」

Matifa's tongue technique is good. Sweet saliva entangles, our tongues are melting together. My son who lost strength a while ago got energetic again. It seems we can start round 2 immediately.

But unfortunately, I can't take Matifa as partner forever. I have another partner today.

When I separate our mouths, Matifa understood and nodded lightly.

Matifa reluctantly pulled out her vagina from my penis. A cloudy liquid dripped from the hole that has been spread a little.

Misha asked me when she saw that.

「Nn...Master's semen...*picha*」

「Misha's great isn't she? It's your turn next. I hope your new master fill you up」

Matifa stroked Misha's head adorably. The two flirting makes me feel jealous.

Chapter 24: Witch Girl and Cat Girl 3P

Part 2

It's boring if I'm just watching the two beautiful girls flirt. I extend my hand on Misha's shaking tail in order to mix in.

「Nya!」

When I opened Misha's genitals, her inside is sufficiently wet already. It seems we're good to go just like this.

「I kept Misha waiting. I'm going in」

「Okay! Please insert Master's penis!」

Misha sticks out her butt asking for it while raising her tail.

I stick my penis to Misha's hole that's smaller than Matifa's. The lubricant is enough, but the entrance is so small that I feel uneasy entering it.

Was my hesitation seen through? Matifa advised Misha.

「Misha, relax, relax yourself. If you strain power it would be hard for your master」

Matifa persuades Misha while patting the line of cheek from Misha's neck. With that alone, Misha's body lost power.

When I force my glans, the meat is spreading along the way. But I still can't insert it easily.

「Nyaaaaa, my crotch is spreading!」

Misha is surprised by the sense of first time.

Power enter Misha's body and my glans were repelled. It might be an influence of body reinforcement, her resistance is stronger than I thought.

「Misha, it would be fine so calm down」

I persuade Misha while stroking her ass, but she doesn't relax easily. Then, Matifa interfered.

「You, try to grip her tail. You'll see something interesting」

「Like this?」

I caught the blueish purple tail in front of me just like I was told.

「Funyaa! M-master!?!」

Her hair stood up for a moment, and it thickened round enough. In addition, Misha's body jumped, and she collapsed and fell limply.

「Cat person's erogenous zone is their tail. Misha is no exception. By the way, Misha can feel it if you stroke her tail like how you stroke your penis. I trained her that way」

I stroke her fluffy tail just like Matifa said, Misha's sticking out her small ass and she's melting completely like a mascot from somewhere.

I began to invade the young vagina that lost it's strength once again.

「Nyaaaa...master's penis...big...」

Even if relaxed, Misha's vaginal hole is still tight. She's still too young as expected. Still, my glans manage to be buried and I felt some strong resistance. It's her hymen.

「Misha, it will hurt but endure it」

「Okay, Mi—sha will endure it」

Gugugu my penis thrust in. While tearing her membrane, I screwed her small vagina by force 「Nya, nyaaaaaaa! Master!? It hurts!」

As expected, loss of virginity is painful that Misha is disillusioned for a moment.

It tightened up that my penis seems to be torn off at the same time.

「It hurts, it hurts! Misha relax!」

「Nyaa! Nyaaaaaaa...」

I gripped Misha's tail while ordering her, then Misha's body relaxed again. You can really control her by a single tail. If I know this, then I could've won the battle earlier.

「Hey, it's interesting right? Since I can't train inside this child's vagina, I developed her mainly there instead. It's possible for her to cum with just her tail now. Now, it's your role from here. Don't just make her feel pleasure from the tail but also in her vagina」

Matifa began to caress Misha while saying that. She kissed Misha then fiddled on her flat chest as revenge from earlier.

Misha melts as it happens.

When I looked at the connecting part, there's quite an amount of blood flowing out. But, Misha doesn't look to be in pain anymore.

I began to piston while settling on only half inside her vagina. I pulled my waist and her folds sticks on me. On the contrary, a hard muscle shrinks tights and my begins to contract on my whole penis.

Every time I thrust, the Illusion of Misha's meat is being scrapped of is remembered. She's an obedient cute kitten instilling the image of her master.

「Misha, how's it?」

「Nyaa, Master is warm. Master is melting Misha once again」

Misha's been embraced by Matifa's chest feeling pleasant. She's delighted that her expression loosened.

Looking at Misha's state, Misha loved it and loosened her cheeks.

「Misha is cute. I want such a daughter」

「On the outside both of you look like children. However, I agree with your opinion」

「Fufu, you're a bad papa for mating with your child」

「Yeah, I'm a bad guy after all. I'm a murdered and a child rapist」

Matifa expresses a smile after hearing me.

「You're an unusual type aren't you. You commit a crime but you still hold good sense. And you're not laying out an excuse such as trivial sense of justice or false truth, you hold your will to the end.

You recognize the world as is, normally, you don't insist your ideas. The only person who can do that are from outside of this world, someone who has been called by a god. Just like me for instance.

I'm in that age, besides, I admire how your body lasted without magical power. I seem to fell in love with you seriously」

Saying so, Matifa separated from Misha and crawled her hands on my body. She sucked at my nipples and rubbed my testicles with her fair delicate hand. My crotch reacted to the stimulation and Misha raised a groan.

「I'm not that amazing. I'm just a selfish man」

Every time I hear Matifa's words, an indescribable frustration wells up inside. I thrust my waist so hard to vent it out.

「Funyaa! Ah, master, it hurts」

Misha looks suffering, but it doesn't matter. It's the slave's role to accept it. Matifa kept talking while not minding Misha.

「That selfishness, everyone is just as bad, you now that you're the same as them. There's no such thing as righteous. Law is just to make the society stable, it's not something to protect a person. Since you can't expect to be protected, you should protect yourself」

「I'll do that even without you telling me. I can no longer turn back」

「That's correct. I will support you on that」

Thus, Matifa's long talk was over.

I'll do what I want to do. Right now, it's Misha. I'll fill up the womb of this lovely kitten with my semen.

「Misha, how's my thrust in your vagina? Are you used to it already?」

I speak while thrusting Misha violently.

「Yes, Master's penis, keeps coming inside me, it feels good! Something coming to Misha」

「Then don't endure and cum」

「Okay, okay, Misha's cumming! I'm cumming from mashter!」

The sliding gradually improves, it makes the piston faster. In addition, Misha's panting voice became intense too., 「Nyaa, nyaa, nyaaaaa! Cumming! Cumiiiiiiiing!!」

Misha's body clinging to bed trembled before long. I felt her always narrow small vagina getting tighter.

「Misha's too sensitive. Do your best because it's not the end yet」

I stir up Misha's tightening vagina forcibly. It's too tight that I can't move, but I throw impact on her womb at least.

「Nya, nya, nyaa! mashtter's coming, nyaaaaa!! Misha's cumming isn't stopping!」

When I caught and rubbed her tail, Misha began to continuously cum. She meows and yell with her inarticulate tongue.

「You're a bad master. Did my words hurt you that much?」

「If you know then don't say it. After Misha it's your turn」

「Ooh, that's scary. Then I suppose I'll wet myself and wait」

Matifa licked her own finger then began to comfort her genital with her hand.

I throw what I accumulated inside to Misha.

「I'm blowing, Misha! Take it!」

「Nyaaaaaaaaaaaaaa!!」

Byuryry byuru I released semen inside Misha's womb. I defiled Misha's uterus with my syrupy thing.

「Hanyaaa...ah...」

That time, a golden liquid leaked out from Misha's crotch. It made a big stain on the bed.

「Ah...I'm sorry...Misha leaked out...」

「I don't mind it Misha. This much isn't a problem」

Matifa comforted the apologetic Misha. Since the owner of the bed doesn't mind, I don't mind it particularly either.

When the leaking ended, Misha fell limp on the bed. Her tail has lost its vigor too.

「Good work Misha. It was good」

「Hanyaaa...Master is really amazing...」

Misha began to sleep just like that. It seems she's really tired I stroke the head of the kitten with a childish body who accepted me and turned to Matifa.

「You know what's next?」

「Of course. I don't mind you doing so intense that you'd break this body」

「Don't regret it」

「Who do you think I am? You better not regret it」

Then, until the new day breaks, the flirtatious voice on the research building didn't stop. While doing Matifa Intensely, I also had sex with Misha a lot of times.

I recover using Matifa's magic when I get tired, and I continued the act until I lost my strength completely.

Chapter 25: Girl's promise

The sun shone on the room I'm not familiar with, I was speechless on the spectacle.

Two girls who aren't even 10 years old are lying down on a bed full of semen.

One of the girls is a cat eared and tailed girl with a bluish purple hair, the other one is a like an artificial product white and black girl White liquid is pouring between their mouths and crotch, sperm sticks on both of their face and chest.

If I remember correctly, this happened after my second round with Matifa. I attacked Matifa intensely while she's gasping for breath. When I lift her like the cursed doll in gossips, she used the royalty's secret magic to me. Why can this one use it? By the way that panties also had the same effect as this, the whole string of questions was blown off and I turned to a beast.

I pushed down Matifa with all my power and poured her vagina with semen like an idiot. If I can't enter anymore, I didn't hesitate and penetrated the curling body of Misha who's sleeping. In addition, I penetrate this two in turns. My lust was received by the two obediently.

When My reason was returning as I bang Misha's insides, Matifa used her magic again. I stopped when the vagina of the two became a semen tank and used the mouth of the two. The parts they can't finish drinking spilled on their just swelling breasts, I kept letting it out. Both Misha and Matifa seemed glad on the semen shower, rather, they rub my balls and squeeze my cock aggressively.

When my reason returned again, Matifa used her magic for the third time. However, my physical strength was also on the limit. Then the two people who guessed it began to push me down and shoved my cock in their pussy and began to move their waist. The two little girls used semen instead of lotion and inserted my penis in their pussy, the chaotic scene looks erotic. It's too chaotic that I don't even know if we're exchanging

saliva or semen when we kiss. The two girls squirted like a fountain, my physical strength is strained at the end as I thrust to the two young hole leading to what's right now.

In short, I had been forced to become a monkey midway. It's a disgrace.

「Haa, haa, haa...」

「You seem to be tired. Well, it's reasonable. No matter how you forge yourself, since you have no magical power, you can't go out of person's level」

Matifa talked to me while her arranging her breath as she sit on the other side of the bed, looking at the sunrise. Lying down next to Matifa is Misha who is sleeping peacefully in bed. I'm saved by the satisfied expression of these two.

「If you think so then don't overwork me. What would you do if I get ED?」

「I was wrong about that. I've been too enthusiastic after a long time. It's because you're too passionate, Also, you should be proud that you lasted. You were trained well. You exceeded my expectations after all. You're really interesting」

「Give me a break」

She seems to be interested on ill-natured people. If she discovered that I'm an otherworlder, it would be more trouble. I must absolutely conceal it.

I had Matifa clean our bodies with magic, I put on clothes and decided to carry Misha on my back where I can return my strength.

「You can come anytime again. I'll plan a different welcome next time. When you're inside the castle I can basically sense you, so you don't need to knock. Well, your ability seems to be able to pass through my senses, but, For now, I'll change my target. I'll analyze your ability. Therefore, be sure to come to the royal castle. And the matter about my panties is a joke. It's possible to get away from the barrier even if you don't put it on so be relieved, you should be relieved. But it's useless unless you possess

it. Also, I returned it's color to black. Instead, I recommend you to hang it on your nose and mouth. Now then, that's all for me. I'll leave Misha to you」

Matifa looked slightly lonely when she said.

「That reminds me, I forgot to ask one thing. I think of transferring your contract of remodeling the beast people with Desire, can you do something about it?」

Matifa answered my unusual question with a smile.

「Witch's contract is absolute. I can't break the service contract. Therefore, for that matter I can't help you. In truth, just telling you is already a breach of contract, but since you stole the secret from Desire and you were able to beat Misha so it's possible. In other words, this is the maximum concession for me. If you want to get rid of the contract itself, you must either defeat me or kill the 50 remodeled beast people. This is all I can say. From here, is something you have to do by yourself」

Matifa said as she laid down on the bed tired. It seems she won't talk any further. I decided to come back home and sleep too.

I went over the castle wall secretly from the sky while carrying Misha on the back. Just like Matifa said, the barrier didn't react at all.

I enter the hideout at the entrance of the second floor and I entered the bedroom without stopping at the workroom. It's a simple room with only a bed and a closet.

I lay down Misha on the bed and crawled next to her.

It was really hard today. Cathy did wake up fellatio in the morning, I eavesdropped in the royal castle, raped Seria while near Lion, fought Misha, and played and did naughty things with Misha and Matifa. When I think once again, it was a cruel day. But, there were some harvests too.

The next big event will be Will Gantt house and Felix's return. The first report of Seria being attacked would soon arrive but the big deal has not been reported at all. Also, I had Cathy to watch Will Gantt House so there's no problem. I can't go against the fatigue from the travel so let's

firmly take a rest here. I slept while thinking so.



It was afternoon when I woke up. When I rose myself and looked around the room, My eyes met with Misha which is staring at me.

「Good morning Master」

「Morning. Is your body okay already?」

「Yup, I'm okay」

Misha hops repeatedly saying so. The skirt is rolled up casually and her panties are exposed to full view.

She looks quite healthy. After the violent fight and her first experience yesterday, she's quite fine. My body still feels heavy. I wonder if this is what being old means.

「For the time being, let's eat」

「Okay, Misha will make one」

I moved to the living room while being relieved that Cathy isn't there. I had left some preserved food, but I decided to leave it Misha and let her do as she like.

Misha began to cook like she's used to it.

She peeled the potatoes off smoothly with her sharp nails, she also cut the hard dried meat into easy to eat pieces.

She lit fire on the furnace with her fingernails instead of flint, then boiled the soup Just what on earth is that nail made of?

She licked the seasonings, salt and herbs to confirm the taste then she threw small amounts.

She blew to cool it down before tasting, satisfied, she put the container aside.

In this world, meat and vegetable soup is common. And a solid brown bread is standing on the table. This much is the limit when you're trying to cook with ingredients right now.

I licked to check the taste of the soup.

「—It's delicious. Good job Misha」

The rich taste sinks on my tired body. The seasoning is moderate, the bad smell of the meat is put out and it doesn't kill the other taste so I have no complaints. Furthermore, I'm surprised that the dried meat that should be hard to eat was processed in a way that it's bitten and cut easily.

Misha on my side looked at me nervous, I pat her head and she was pleased. It seems I really found a good bargain.

I had Misha use the table and the two of us ate.

As soon as I gave her a permission, Misha nibbled on the bread.

「Isn't Misha better in this than fighting?」

I let out my thoughts suddenly. Judging from the fight yesterday, her body ability is high but she doesn't know fight techniques.

「Mogumogul...Yes, I was helping the household all the time, then I was brought to Matifa-sama's place and became strong. Hagu2...」

Misha is originally a house aiding slave from a merchant's house. However, Matifa bought the goods of the slave merchant. And then, she did remodeling reinforcement and gave them incomparable strength. It seems dozens of beast people have been bought the same way. Among then, Matifa was interested in Misha and gave her special treatment. Night and day.

Beast people have been made to fight among themselves and Misha is reinforced especially and was the strongest.

「However, Master is stronger! Though Misha was strong she was never able to win against Master. Master is an amazing person!」

It seems to be the reason why Misha recognized me. It's merely a difference of experience, but it's not necessary to correct it. I obediently accepted the gaze of respect of Misha.

After we finished our lunch, we went out the town. It's to get Misha's

daily clothes. After buying it briefly around the shopping area, I went on the back store and bought a spy costume for Misha.

When I asked the back store to make Japanese clothes for Misha, the female merchant looked amazed and brought moderate goods. We just talked for almost an hour so why? Misha starts to talk as if scared. The companion was a Japanese gentleman but not to this degree.

And, while we're at it, we passed through Capo's pharmacy in order to buy fatigue reduction medicine. Misha faced the wrong direction suddenly

「Master, there's a scream. Perhaps, a girl」

Misha raised a worried voice. The direction Misha is facing is an unpopular alley. I'm not so corrupt to abandon a girl in trouble. ...I hope she's cute.

「Lead the way」

「Here!」

When I ordered her, Misha began to ran happily. I follower her. I caught magical power hanging around the back alley immediately. The number was 4. One person's magical power is abnormally low. This feeling is the girl with a hat whom I met with Capo yesterday. There's no mistake that her house must be close.

I heard the girl's scream along with the laughter of the scums from the back alley.

「No! let me go!」

「Calm down!」

「It's an easy job to take and collect children with no Magic」

「Yeah, we can drink good alcohol today」

「Stop talking and help me here!」

It seems that they knew the girl and attacked her. Is their purpose kidnapping?

「I'll make an opening so Misha secure the girl. Don't kill」

「Okay」

I shortened the distance and plunged to the back alley.

Just before my opponents saw me, I flew and got overhead. The enemies are a shorty, fatty, and skinny. Their magical power isn't so strong, they're just hoodlums expert on small fry. It's unnecessary to kill them.

The girl's arms are being held by the fatty so she's in a situation which she can't run away. Her broad brimmed hat trademark fell on the ground and her pink hair is disheveled. She's holding a paper bag on her right hand.

First, I land on the back of the fatty who's holding the girl's arm. I beat his head with a dagger at the same time.

Fatty's eyes turned white and fell on the ground slowly.

「What are you! Appearing from nowhere!」

The small man noticed my existence immediately readied his sword and magic.

He was one beat late and the thin man noticed the abnormality and reached for the girl

「Don't move! I don't care what happens to this—」

However, the man's arm flew to the sky. Misha secured the girl from the fat man who fell down. Nice timing.

「Stop that. You won't experience pain if you pull out now」

I gave them a warning as the general public and the girl saw me. If there's no eyewitness then questioning are unnecessary.

「Aren't you a man with No magic! How dare you putting up a brave front! Don't think you can go against the three of us Tartarus sword」

「Ha? Tartar sauce?」

「Mackerel sword...Delicious. Drool」

The short man suddenly said something incomprehensible.

Misha muttered something disturbing from the back. Even if we defeat them, I don't think their delicious.

By the way, in this world, mackerel isn't a fish but a monstrous sword with a distinctive eye. It tastes very good. Especially, it's fried egg is outstanding.

「The three Tartarus sword! Youuu, I won't forgive you!!」

The short man slashes me while shouting. His movement was strengthened with magic. However, his too obedient to his swordsmanship.

Or rather, where did they get this cursed sword? The sword of Shorty has a strange pattern, but I don't feel any magical power dwelling, it's an ordinary sword.

When I match the dagger with the swinging sword, there's no abnormality as expected. I just slid the hammer and I palmed his chin to counter.

This technique is drilled by my master physically, you shake the brain of the opponent. Their body is strong to some degree, but they can't prevent it all.

The shorty fell down slowly and I aimed at his stomach.

The thin man from the back pulled out a knife immediately. I twist my body and dodged, but it grazed my clothes. I seem to have been made to mistake a chance for a matted black blade by a lanky arm. 3

However, only my clothes are cut and there's no abnormality. There's no cursed sword that erodes you with fire.

I twisted his arm and pinned him down the ground.

Could it be that the one they call cursed sword is this one looking like a kitchen knife? If so then the first assumption 'tartar sauce' would be funny.

It's a typical bluff, but a person who can't detect magical power well may be fooled. I say the bluff tactics peculiar to the weak. I know it well.

These fellows are probably like me.

「That's the end. Give it up if you don't want to be pushed to the guards」

「I-I give up. Please spare my life...」

I snatched his black knife and threatened him, the skinny kept nodding. When I released him, he took his companions and run away.

I picked up the hat and removed the dust.

「For the time being, let's change place」

I covered the girl who's held by Misha who's absentminded with a hat. At that time, I saw a sharp ear floating from the interval of her hair.

Chapter 26: Tiny Breasts vs Tiny Breasts

I never thought that a clichéd event would come.

I was helped by Seria when I was attacked in this world. Then I grew up to be on this girl's side to help her. If I attack somebody afterwards, it's a complete conquest. No, since I attacked Seria so it's already complete?

I came back to the street while thinking of such a foolish idea. First, let's talk to the girl I helped.

「Are you okay? Were you injured?」

「I'm fine. Thank you for helping me」

The girl pulls down the visor of her hat with both of her hand and expressed her thanks while hiding her face. But she can't hide her red cheeks. She's quite shy.

Oh well, I played the part of a reliable onii-san who helped her. If she doesn't react then it's boring.

「If you have someone to thank, thank Misha. It's Misha who noticed your voice」

「Thank you too. You're quite a strong girl」

「Yes! I did what Master told me」

Misha looks satisfied with the thanks. Her tail shakes with her mood.

It's been a while since I did a good thing so I continued the Hero act.

「I'm glad that you're okay. While we're at it, let's send you to your house」

「Are you sure?」

「Yeah, I'm worried after all」

「Then...Please」

I walked the street by the guidance of the girl. Meanwhile, the girl hid her face and fell silent. Is she still embarrassed? What a cute girl, when I was thinking of that, my sleeve is getting pulled.

「Master, your face is weird」

「Don't say it」

When Misha warned me, I changed the subject to fool the girl.

「By the way, what's your name?」

「Hahya! Uhm, Lilith. I'm called Lilith!」

Lilith, who was thinking deeply was surprised with the sudden voice.

「It's Lilith? Why you went alone today?」

「Err, onee-chan fell down and I got medicine from oji-san. Then, I was attacked by the people on the back...」

From Lilith's talk, the two sisters are living together and the elder sister suddenly came back home from work during daytime and fell down. The person herself said that she's just tired so there's no need to worry, but the worried Lilith took medicine from Capo alone. Then, she was suddenly attacked on the way and reached the back alley and that brings to the current situation.

Then, we immediately arrived at Lilith's house while talking. There was a two story house with a terrace.

It's a cheap rent house which is built by the state support. When I looked left and right, all the houses have the same structure.

Colorful flower blooms in front of Lilith's house and is much more livelier than the other houses. Gardening is probably her hobby.

I told her to be careful before we bid farewell, I squat down to match the eyes of Lilith.

「Be careful next time. Since we people with No magic are easy to be aimed at, don't go alone. Okay?」

Lilith nodded as she saw my still face. Her face is red. This girl fell in love.

I'll just leave coolly afterwards. Bye then, when I turned back, Lilith raised a cry.

「U-uhm! A-as thanks! Err...Would you like to drink tea inside?」

Lilith wants to detain me. However, I don't know what to do so I can't speak.

「That's right! Snacks! I'm about to bake cookies! Please eat it by all means!」

「Cookie! Master, let's eat cookies!!」

Pikon Misha was baited with food. Her eyes are sparkling just like when I was attacked. At this rate I can't do anything but go in. This isn't the development I wished for.

「Well then, if you insist」

With that said, I intruded Lilith's house.

There's a lot of flower arrangements and houseplant that calms my heart inside the house.

「You like plants?」

「Yes~ It's because it calms down restless people naturally. Also—I'm an elf after all」

Lilith hesitated, but took off her hat, then her pointed ears are exposed. It's moving unsteadily as if insisting it's existence out her pink hair.

「It's a secret right? Why did you tell me?」

「Onii-san saw it a while ago. Also...I believe in you」

Lilith looked at me and Misha while saying so.

While we're talking, footsteps can be heard from the upper floor 「Lilith came back? Oh, a visitor?」

「Ah, Onee-chan you should still be sleeping! These people helped me when I was attacked a while ago. I want to thank them so I let them in」

The magical power from the voice I heard is familiar. Then, when I saw the face of the person from the second floor, I imagined I pumped my fist into the air triumphantly.

Coming down is a leaf colored hair elf dressed in pajamas— Seria's maid, Lululie.

I thought of it since I saw Lilith's pointed ears.

Demi-human's standing in this country is low. There are considerably few people living in the royal capital who doesn't discriminate them severely. Furthermore, they can't take good jobs because they have to take magical power purification medicine. It's true that she has a decent job. With that, It's natural to think that Lilith's elder sister is Lululie.

Of course, there's a possibility that it's an unknown elf from the capital. But the two are sisters just like how I imagined.

I'm able to make contact with Lululie by chance. I can use this.

While my scum thoughts are rising, Lilith talked while making some hand gestures.

「It really happened in an instant! When I thought Onii-san was cut the other guy was down! He then suppressed the other person in a flash, it was amazing! Then, Misha carried me like a prince even though she's small—」

Lilith is too excited that she talked about what we did to Lululie over and over again.

When Lilith finished speaking briefly soon, Lululie bowed at me.

「Thank you so much for saving Lilith. I'm Lululie, this child's sister. Here's our living room, please come」

Then, we were guided by Lululie to the living room. We finished the self-introductions in the meantime.

Lululie's gaze seems to investigate but I guess it isn't just my imagination. She thinks I'm a suspicious person, but she hadn't seen through me. She seems to not noticed my relationship with Seria since the attack the other day.

「Please relax as I prepare the tea」

Lululie says as she heads to the kitchen, but her feet is unsteady.

It's understandable. She slept on the duration of the attack, then forced to sleep through magic to remove her fatigue. Furthermore, when she woke up, she constantly attended to Seria. She returned home today probably because she left the castle after being kicked out by Seria out of her room last night. It's natural that she'll fall down.

Lilith stopped Lululie.

「I'm going to do it so Onee-chan should rest」

「However, can Lilith set fire?」

「I can do it if I try」

「But...」

Quarrel between siblings is no good, but they suddenly started fighting. However, the words of worry are the only one coming out. This sisters must be close.

An outsider should just watch and not butt in, but the quarrel escalates gradually.

「I will do it」

「No, I will...」

「I will—」

They won't hand it over each other. Then, Lilith spoke a line she shouldn't say.

「Onee-chan should rest so you can't. Your boobs won't grow big if you don't!」

「Wait, Lilith!？」

Lululie shyly hid her small chest with her hand due to the sudden mental attack. But, Lilith didn't care about it.

「I know it. Onee-chan rubs it when she's taking a bath to make it bigger」

「L-Lilith, shut up!」

「I won't shut up. Onee-chan always mind her breasts and kept sighing」

「Isn't Lilith the same!」

Lululie lost it and made a comeback to Lilith. Then, the fight between two tiny breasts started.

「If I grow up, I'll be like Seria-sama!」

「It's impossible. Princess is already big when she was at your age」

「I-It's not impossible. I'll definitely surpass onee-chan!」

「Look, your target changed. Also, I won't lose to Lilith」

Lululie cuts down Lilith's dream in one stroke.

Is Lilith the same age when I first saw Seria? Certainly, Seria's breast was bigger than Lululie's that time. No matter how long the elf lived, it's impossible for Lilith to catch up with Seria.

But, I don't know who would win on Lilith vs Lululie.

「I-I can win. I heard how to get as big as Seria」

「Wait a moment Lilith, teach me that」

Lululie questioned Lilith desperately. What an absurd drive.

Lilith grinned and said.

「Noo~ I won't teach Onee-chan. You can just do what you do by yourself」

「Is that so? then tonight's dinner is green pepper」

「Why!? green pepper has nothing to do with it?」

「When you're choosy, your breast won't grow big」

Lululie's counterattack began. She used the deadly 『Being choosy is bad』attack. It's impossible for a child to counter it. Now, how will Lilith dodge this?

「Ugugu, I-I can even eat green pepper!」

「Then, I'll add eggplant, tomato and mushrooms」

「Eeeh! W-wait. I'll talk, I'll talk so...」

Lilith raised the white flag on the Lululie's onslaught.

However, Lilith's eyes swim as she speak. She really doesn't know the method how to make the chest big. She's thinking desperately right now. She glanced at me, then, she her eyes flashed as if she's inspired.

「Err, Onee-chan. That method is...rubbing」

Lilith springs out her hand as Lululie approach her. But, Lululie answered with a flat voice.

「I already tested it」

I remembered a slight fear with her mutter of despair.

But, Lilith won't go down yet.

「That's different, you shouldn't massage yourself, but the one who you love should!」

「The one I love...」

「That's right, therefore it's impossible for onee-chan to be single forever. I'm getting massaged by onii-san so I'm fine!」

Saying so, Lilith jumped at my arm. Her hard rib pressed against me. Then, Lululie finally remembered that we exist.

「Ah...」

「Ahahah...」

Lululie became stiff with Lilith clinging to me, I laughed to deceive her and Misha is grooming her tail.

What's this chaos space? For the time being, let's run away. It's the best way.

「Ah, what is it? I'm hungry. Misha」

「Yes, I'm hungry. I want to eat the cookies soon」

Misha read the atmosphere properly. Next, let's give her a task.

「That's right, Misha, help Lilith. You won't have problems baking

cookies right?」

「Okay, leave it to me. Let's go」

Misha pulled Lilith's hand and led her to the kitchen. Lululie sat on the chair, she seemed embarrassed.

「I'm sorry, I showed something unsightly...」

「Don't mind it. I didn't hear nor see anything」

After talking with Lululie for a while, Lilith brought the tea in front of us.

「Look, I can do it Onee-chan!」

「That's because Misha-chan helped you. Gosh...」

Lilith boasted on Lululie for a bit, then she returned to the kitchen. She will bake cookies with Misha this time.

Apparently, this war is Lululie's loss.

After the play ended, I tried to talk to Lululie.

I faced Lululie once again and talked to her with a serious face.

「Lululie, I want to talk about the matter when Lilith is attacked」

「...What could it be?」

She understood the atmosphere, Lululie's face turned serious too.

「This time those fellows tried to kidnap Lilith, but they aimed at Lilith as an individual. It wasn't because since she's an elf with No magic, it's Lilith herself. You got a clue why she's aimed at?」

「If I have any ideas?」

Lululie is lost in thought hitting her elbow with her hand.

「That's right. The reason why Lilith's attack— for example, she might know some important information about the attack on Princess Seria the other day」

When I said that, Lululie looked at me suspiciously.

「...Why's it about that?」

「Lululie might not know it, but the matter about Princess Seria being attacked by someone the day before is already a rumor downtown. She was with a maid that time. And then, they attempted to kidnap Lilith a while ago. When you match it, you can see the aim of the criminal」

Lululie meditated for a while, then her mouth slowly opened.

「In short, the real aim...is me?」

I silently agreed.

If they were to kidnap Lilith, what would she do? Since Lululie has no money, they won't demand it. Perhaps, their real purpose is Lululie, or to threaten Seria.

Perhaps the mastermind is no other than the three perpetrators. Then, the mastermind knows the relationship of Lululie and Seria.

「This is just a guess. Also, I haven't heard about the details. However, it seems the two of you are in danger」

「——That's, true. Your speculation might be true. However...」

Lululie understood the meaning of my words. But, she's confused. She doesn't know what to do.

But, I will push it here.

「So, I have a proposal. I, with Misha intend to guard you two for a while. I have the same constitution as Lilith but I'm sensitive on enemies, and Misha has a physical ability almost equal to C-class. And we can call someone we trust when we're busy. How about it?」

Since I hid my power, I lowered my statement.

Lululie is a significant person. She's Seria's weak point and also my target. I can't leave her alone.

I thought of escorting her from the castle, but this situation doesn't exist. Furthermore, Lululie dislikes knights. Then, there's a good chance I get her favor.

When I was thinking about it, Lululie refused.

「That's...I'm grateful for it, however I can't pay for the fee. Also, I don't want to involve people in danger」

「You don't need to mind the reward. It's not for free, but you can pay on a reasonable range. I won't demand for your body so don't worry」

「But, that's—」

Lululie is still hesitating. After all, she would hesitate to make a debt from a man whom she didn't know.

I really want her to pay with her body, but I promised Seria that I won't lay my hand on Lululie. I'm a man who keeps promises. But, I can make a favorable impression with this plan.

「This is just my selfishness. Since I already know the girl being aimed at, I can't just leave her alone. I can watch secretly from the outside, but I want to protect you close. I don't mind if you don't pay for reward. I'm prepared for the risk of dying since I imitate adventurer's temporary freedom. Is it still no good1?」

「Even...if you say that2...」

Lululie cast down her eyes.

Though I suppressed goosebumps and irritation but, there's no much reaction.

She has a stronger guard than I thought. It seems she need another push.

When I was thinking of what should I do, a voice from the kitchen is heard.

「Uwaa, Misha, that's amazing! How did you do it?」

「I don't know. But this nail that cuts everything is my pride. It doesn't even get dirty」

「Eh. Can it cut stones?」

「It can even cut Mithril」

「Even mithril!？」

「Yes, But I can't cut master」

「You can't cut onii-san okay!？」

The two girls seems to cook happily. But the contents of the conversation is dangerous.

「How about it? I'd be grateful if Misha and Lilith would become friends. Since she doesn't have friends due to special circumstances, but i think it's a good chance」

Appeal to sympathy strategy. If this is still no good I don't have anything else at hand.

I patiently waited for Lululie's answer. Before long, Lululie looked at the kitchen—then smiled.

「...That child seems to be having fun. Got it. I don't want to see Lilith be involved in danger so I will accept your proposal. And also, it seems Lilith would be pleased too. It may be inconvenient, but guard us」

「Be relieved. I will definitely guard you」

I returned an answer while being relived from Lululie's answer.

The first stage of winning over the elf sisters is cleared.

I decided the guarding contents, we decided the reward and I signed the escort contract.

Chapter 27: Lululie's massage

About the guard contract, we decided that Misha is in charge of Lilith, and I will be responsible to pick up Lululie at night and night guarding.

「So there's a place like this」

「Yes, I ask you of this... Huh?」

As soon the talk ended, Lululie began to shake her head unsteadily. She can't focus her eyes. It seems she overworked too much that her body is exhausted.

「Are you okay?」

「Eh? Ah, Sorry...」

If I leave her alone she's likely to fall off from the chair so I go around her back to support her body. She has a really slim body, I grabbed her bony shoulders.

Just like that, I peeped on the small chest's pointed end from the gap of her neck and pajamas from behind. I can't say that her body is unhealthy to that extent, but she's a bit to thin.

「Are you eating properly?」

「Yes, for the time being」

「For the time being? I guess the food expense is cut for the medicine anyway. I think it's no good」

「That's...」

Lululie is embarrassed for a reply. It seems it was a bulls-eye.

「The reason why you fell down this time is because your physical strength declined. Since you'd be troubled if you can't work anymore, take meals properly」

「Yes. I'm sorry」

「Look, it's the medicine Lilith brought. Drink it.」

I lifted the vial left on the table and handed it over to Lululie.

Lululie accepted it absentmindedly and put it in her mouth. She drank the green liquid, then breathed out sexily.

I often drink this medicine, there's actually a small effect in this medicine besides the physical strength recovery. The body warms up and will be wrapped up in pleasure when you drink it. If drank when tired, your body would relax greatly what you'd be in dreamy state of mind in no time .

In short, it's a bonus time where Lululie's brain isn't working well. I light body touch is possible without problems. I won't let this chance get away.

「It takes a while before the effect takes over. Should I carry you to your room?」

「No, just let me be for a while」

That's a shame. She declined. But, I want to do her in this state.

「Is that so? Then I'll massage you」

「Eh? Ah...」

I massaged Lululie's thin shoulders without waiting for an answer.

「After all you just work all the time right? A person who works hard for their family is okay, but you also have to pay attention to your body. When it's hard for you, it's okay to act spoiled you know」

I was somehow able to decrease her ability to think gradually. I console the body that's been tired from anxiety and long journey.

「Ah, there, it feels good...」

Lululie surrendered to pleasure as I massage her shoulder gently.

As expected, even she's young her shoulders are heavy. It's worth massaging this.

When I get exhausted on training, I was often massaged by master. If I recovered, it's intensive hellish training again, but I remember the pleasure even now. Sometimes I and Cathy do it mutually so I mastered

the technique.

I used Lululie as subject today.

「Nn...Ah, Un...」

I massaged her nape, to her shoulder, to her arm deliberately. While taking care not to use excessive force, her stiff muscles starts to loosen, then Lululie's eyelids closed. I gently lowered her body on the table and applied finger pressure on her back.

「Does it hurt?」

「Nu...no, it's just right...」

「Is that so? If it hurts just tell me」

「Okay...」

I lowered my finger along the spine. From her back to her waist, I gave it a finger pressure equally. Her posture is bad so I can't do it earnestly, but I adjust the backbone in a possible range and fixed her body.

As expected, Lululie's ass has little meat. Thin girls aren't bad, but I wish she's a bit round.

「.....*suu*」1

Meanwhile, Lululie is totally asleep. She must be really tired.

Now then, I finished massaging her neck, shoulder, and waist, her feet is impossible in this posture. If so, then the next target is the breasts.

According to Lilith-sensei, if it's rubbed by a man you like your breast would get bigger.

If, it really becomes big, Lululie would need it.

I like small breasts, but it's a big problem for Lululie.

That's the match of Lululie and Seria's chest size. I became sad when I saw that scene.

Not because she's a maid of the royal family, but I can't help but pity the difference in beast status of Lululie.

Furthermore, Seria is still at age of growth. The difference would be wider in the future. Then what would happen? Lululie would surely be damaged.

She minds that she's small. She knows that it's a wish that won't come true, still she won't be able to suppress the jealousy on Seria.

Then, it's possible that these two's friendship may crack. I don't want to see that²

That's why I must make Lululie's breasts big. If that happens, Lululie would be happy and I'm sure that Seria would be pleased too. Then, the two would be glad. I will raise this breasts³

With that, I leaned Lululie's body on the chair. I stopped her body as her head isn't stable.

「Lululie, the next would be your chest, do you want me to continue?」

「.....Nu...Yes?」

Since I promised Seria, I can't do it forcefully. However, since Lululie wished for a massage and accepts, there's no problem.

Even if Lululie is half asleep.

「What do you want? You want me to continue?」

「Ah...Yes...Please uu...」

Okay, I got her consent⁴ Thus, there's no problem. There's no problem.

「Got it. If you don't like it then say it」

「Nu...」

I attack the beasts slowly from the top because she would be surprised if I suddenly touch it. I massaged her nape and her collarbone line gently. When Lululie got used to it, I lowered my hand and massaged her pecs⁵

「NNn...」

There's no resistance from the sleep-like state Lululie. The softness of her chest is handed down to my hand on top of her clothes.

Next, I pushed my palm in her chest, I draw my hand inside and outside Lululie's small chest. I see the valley of her chest from the gap of the clothes disappearing.

「Ahn...」

I was caught up in the moment and continued, Lululie leaked a sweet sigh. But, Lululie's eyes is still closed and she doesn't show a bit of dislike.

I'll continue.

I move my hand to the bottom of her chest then moved my hand to lift it this time. I moved her underboob to the center and released my hand.

Then, her small chest shook. The size fits the palm of my hand, it was shaking according to gravity.

I can see it even on top of her clothes. I took the shape of my hand, I can clearly feel it's movement. I did it twice, three times, it transmitted that the tip gradually got solid.

「N, fuu...」

Lastly, before this ends, I massaged her breast as a whole. Lululie's entire small breast fits my palm, still it had a certain elasticity and softness. I moved my finger gently to not stimulate it too much, I enjoyed the touching feeling from the top of her clothes. And when I continued doing it, Lululie's nipples are erect. She seems to feel it just like massaging herself.

But, any more than this and I won't be able to endure it, so I stopped today's breast massage.

When I returned my hand on her shoulder massage, Lululie woke up before long.

「N...Huh? I was...」

「Yo, are you awake?」

「Ah...Ren-san...」

Lululie looked upward like she's drooling. My face is reflected in the ceiling upside down.

As the brain slowly activated and understood the situation, Lululie's face changed to shame gradually.

「U-Uhm, I-I-I!」

Lululie hid her face with her hands. Her ears were dyed red as she faced down.

Apparently that's how it is today. I want to massage her lymph with my finger someday.

「Did you ease up a bit?」

「Uhm...Yes, thanks to you I felt better」

「Is that so? Then I'm glad」

I separated from the embarrassed Lululie and seated on a chair.

Just how far did Lululie remember to be so shy?

Is she embarrassed that her body is touched? or is she embarrassed that her chest is massaged? I expect that she didn't notice the chest. Her underwear may be wet.

「For me to sleep like that...」

Apparently it's about that. Is she embarrassed that her sleeping face is seen? If there's no problem that I touched her body, I'll do it again.

I was thinking of what I should do next time, then a voice from the kitchen rose.

「Onii-san, we baked it!」

「Master, we did it!」

The two children jumped out from the kitchen. They're holding a plate with cookies that has a sweet fragrance.

「Huh? Onee-chan, what's wrong?」

「N-nothing!」

「N~? Suspicious...」

Lilith noticed the abnormality of Lululie, but Lululie denied it. She turned her red flushed face away to avoid suspicion.

「The medicine worked. Other than that, you guys did bake it well?」

「Mogumogu6... Yeah, I made it with Lilith-chi」

「Mi-chan is skillful」

The two seems to be in good terms that they start to call each other by nicknames. The two presented the dish while munching. Of course, I waited for the two to eat.

「Master is thinking something strange again. ...Paku7」

「I'm not thinking of anything」

It hadn't been a day since we met yet, Misha can already read my mind8. Is my face really easy to read?

I should better think of countermeasure or something. For instance, hiding my face. Of course, anything but the panties.

I postponed the Misha countermeasure for the timebeing and extended my hand on the work of these two.

Lilith watches me seriously as I eat.

I put the cookie in my mouth while being a bit nervous. The freshly baked texture and the flavor of butter spreads over my mouth.

「...How is it?」

「Yup, perfect. It's delicious」

「Yay~! Mi-chan he said it's delicious」

「Yeah, Lilith-chi's cookies are delicious」

Lilith hops in delight as she was praised.

Misha eats the cookie stealthily while making a V sign. You eat too much.

「Can I have some too?」

「Onee-chan should eat to get healthy」

「Okay」

Lululie eats along with the two. Her complexion improved after taking the medicine, but you can't remove the fatigue.

Since she's thin, I want her to eat a lot and get well. A little more flesh is better after all.

「You two did well. It's really delicious」

「Yeah!」

When Lululie praised her, Misha's ears raised high. But, Lilith showed a surprised face.

「It's unusual for onee-chan to praise someone. Did something good happened with Onii-san?」

What?

「Y-You're wrong. I just praised it honestly because it was delicious. Don't think of strange things」

「G-got it」

Lilith easily yielded to the intimidating smile of Lululie. However, I have more chance than I thought.

Should I make fun of her for a moment?

「Lululie, should I tell them the thing from a while ago?」

「E-e-e-e-earlier!?!」

「What what? Did something happen as expected? Did my onee-chan steal the march!?!」

Lilith is interested in the panicking Lululie. As expected, these sisters are interesting.

「We talked about escorting. You don't mind it right?」

「Eh, ah, t-that's right. Yes, please」

「Escort? What's that?」

When I said so, Lululie was relieved. Lilith complains as she don't know the talk.

「Since you might be attacked again, I discussed it with her. And so, we decided that I and Misha will guard you」

「Eh, Onii-san will protect us?」

Lilith's eyes sparkle like a girl that fell in love. After all, girls of this age longs for a princess-like story. In this case, the prince feels like a low-life, but that low-life has it easy so I'm greatly delighted.⁹

「Yeah, we can't be together at all times, but I'll be here as much as possible」

「Are you sure!? Yay! Thank you onii-san!」

Lilith embraced me forcefully. I received her by my chest while sitting down.

「Misha too」

I was embraced by Misha from behind for some reason.

「Fufu, you're popular」

「Well yeah. Since I'm risking my life here, I deserve this much」

「That's true」

I saw Lululie laugh as the two children cling to me.

It's an expression I hadn't seen since that incident. Lululie's tense face finally calmed down a little.

But, that's just temporary. Lululie will have a hard time in the future. I will be the cause of it.

This is a definite matter. As long as I don't give up on Seria, Lululie will surely know Seria's current state someday. Just what kind of reaction will she show? That's something I look forward too.

*

1. Sleeping sound.

2. Awwww, Ren knows that friendship is power.
3. Lift up your hearts!.
4. Dammit Ren, she's half-asleep!.
5. https://en.wikipedia.org/wiki/Pectoralis_major_muscle.
6. Mumbles.
7. Nom.
8. Today's the second day actually.
9. この場合は王子様が下種すぎる気がするが、その下種からすればチョ口くて大変喜ばしいのである。

Chapter 28: Princess Seria's solo play

After explaining the escort matters, Lululie slept in her room to let her recover.

I leave the dinner to Misha and Lilith and I came back home alone because there's work.

The sun has set and it was time to contact Cathy.

Cathy just returned when I entered the workroom. She appeared in the corner of the room like a shadow and united with the landscape. I can perceive her since I'm sensitive to magic, but her presence is too thin that even a trained man won't notice her easily.

「Yo, how's the other side?」

「A fast horse arrived at Will Gantt's house this afternoon. I tried to eavesdrop and I they were talking about the executioner disturbance. Those who should deal with princess Seria is missing and is being searched」

Executioner is a common name in the imperial capital recently. His victims goes up to two digits, and his name was given because everyone he kills had their neck cut.

Executioner escapes any kind of guard and appears in front of the target. Then, he disappears the moment he killed the target.

They had various theories on it's true nature, like ghosts, or a new kind of demonic beast, but the answer is Me.

This time, I left the dead body as a warning that it was an act of an assassin. But, the surprise attack is from the border so it would take a day and a half for a fast horse for every kind of information to be dispatched. Therefore, the other party tried to meddle with Lilith and Lululie before the warning arrived.

The information should've reached the imperial capital now, Felix would break off the search for princess Seria and consider thinking an excuse desperately.

「Did you know when Felix returned?」

「Yes. From the report, it would be a day after tomorrow」

「That went as expected. I did a lot so I'm tired」

I sneaked in the castle to obtain information yesterday, fought with Misha, Came into contact with Matifa, Lilith was almost kidnapped and I made Lululie take me as her guard.

Cathy became silent when she heard my story.

「That's how it is.」

「...The noble related information is short」

「Yeah, I don't know the plots of the two great marquises. Also, the state of the two princes are strange」

「Yeah, especially there's no reason to fight that Will Gantt. Because if you do nothing, Radom will be the king as he's the superior」

Cathy is right, in this current state of affairs, there's no reason for Will Gantt Family to fight. Will Gantt family is the first group in the first prince Radom faction. Even if they do nothing, prosperity is promised. If so, they should move avoiding the civil war.

I would understand if it's the Mark Newt family that prepares a revolt. In fact the second Prince Desire and Mark Newt house daughter Ophelia is planning to it , it is obvious from the fact that they established a strength.¹

However, the first prince Radom has no attitude with the Will Gantt Family. The Will Gantt who took strong measures to kidnap Seria just had Radom berserk when he heard the name of his brother. My uneasiness can't be wiped.

「Is there something that gives the Second prince Desire advantage?」

「Let see. Jus one alone can turn this situation over」

When she got it, Cathy suggested an answer to me.

Because I'm ignorant about the royalty and nobility, she's giving me a

lecture. She's a reliable sister at these times.

I can't think this can disillusion me. Then, I found an answer immediately.

「Is it the king?」

「That's right. King Ortiz hadn't decided his heir yet. Perhaps, using that reason, Desire might spread a rumor that he would be the next king」

Spreading rumors to provoke Radom. The short-tempered Radom took the provocation easily. Then, with Radom's failures piling up to that extent, he plans to drag him down and impeach him. He would say that he's the one suitable to be the king.

it's possible that the two loud laughter combination is the preparation for the harassment. For instance, they could frame up Radom assaulting a victim and tell a lie that Seria aims for the Kings seat. Besides something cruel will be also included. They would corner him mentally.

「Then, for the king not announcing his heir—」

「Because it might trigger a civil war, they're waiting for the right timing. Or it's possible that they can't decide it」

「Is it self protection after all? Those incompetent people」

The successor battle or the power struggle of nobles. They can't help but drag people in it. Furthermore, the king lacks the ability to control.

That's why he decided to take out Seria as a bride and decrease the foreign enemy.

If this situation continues, it's just a matter of time before this country collapse.

Cathy's conjecture isn't entirely wrong either. My job is to support. After I rest for half a day I will do it.

「I'll invade the castle again. I'll leave the Will Gantt and Mark Newt houses to you Cathy. If you have time, investigate the kidnapping of Lilith」

「Roger that」

Cathy disappeared in the shadows after speaking. It's a unique ability of a dark elf to obstruct recognition in the shadows.

She can't teleport nor be invisible like me, but it's quite a convenient ability. But even so...

「Today's Cathy is docile」

If it's the usual Cathy she would beg for it. Is it 'that' day?

While praying that it's just my imagination, I changed my clothes and went to the castle.



Imperial Castle's work is over at night and a lot of people are going home. Most signs of life disappeared with only soldiers guarding going around a little.

However, I can't be careless as I don't know what will happen. I was attacked by Misha yesterday, and Matifa can see me right now. The strong sign of magical power from Lion is from the direction of the lodging house of the guards, I marked it as monster's den.

But more than that, I was astonished on the scene in front of me.

「Ah...N, naa...」

The beautiful silver hair fan spread on the bed. With that in mind, Seria wearing a transparent negligee wiggles herself indecently.

Seria is alone in the closed room.

「N...No good, yet...」

Seria lies on the soft bed and is rubbing her own thighs. The right hand extends to the source and I realized that she's comforting her secret part on top of her underwear. Her left hand grabs her chest and massages it.

If I'm not mistaken, Seria is masturbating right now.

Seria raised her chin and bent her body forward in pleasure. It's a reaction I've seen so many times.

Could it be that her nature awaken when she was raped?

The girl who doesn't know climax before I violated her, she had a feeling to comfort herself after being raped for two consecutive days.

It's a warm welcome for me, I'm happy that this is the result of my two days of loving her, but it doesn't make sense.

Also, there's another problem. I'd like to invade the interior as soon as possible, but all the invasion pathway are shut so I'm troubled. The window is closed and there's two female knights guarding it. But, if I opened the window to the public, the masturbation today will end.

There's one way to invade. That's the method of teleportation.

However, it's my trump card and is an ability I reserve against Matifa. Should I use that for this?

Matifa doesn't know I can teleport since I haven't used it to move within the walls of the castle. She might have noticed it vaguely, but she doesn't have a conclusive evidence.

But, that ability comes to light if Matifa sees it. However, I can't just observe Seria masturbating.

This is the ultimate choice.

Should I expose my trump card and observe Seria's masturbation close? Or should I open the window and force Seria to masturbate?

Observing from a distance is not in the choices.

I thought for three seconds and made a decision

My vision switch in an instant.

A rolled up negligee and glossy thighs. And the thin fingertip extends to her pink underwear. And, the exited smell of a female is floating—

I teleported to Seria's legs. Then, I erased my presence with all my power. I didn't make any sound at all.

「Nu...Even though it's no good, I can't stop.」 ...Ahn」

Whenever Seria brushes her genital, I can hear the Kuchukuchu wet

sounds. Seria's delicate hands shifted the panties and rubbed her own meat directly.

Seria's finger is wet by the clear liquid overflowing inside her vagina.

The combination of the girl's beautiful fingertip and indecent genital is very arousing.

「N, it's a bit different. More...like, hyaa!」

Seria changed the movement of her fingers little by little. At first she was stroking the slit, then began to rub inside it. Guni Guni Her flesh is being squashed.

Love nectar flows from the inside and falls down to her ass and the sheets. Seria doesn't notice it. She just moved her fingers seeking pleasure.

「Ah! Haa, haa...my voice is leaking」

She desperately hides her voice, but she can't endure and her lovely voice leaks out. She wants to stop, but her body moves on it's own and is not stopping. The finger moved passionately.

I shifted my glance a bit above, there I saw Seria's breasts moving with great power. It defies the gravity as it pushes up the thin negligee, and I can understand that the tip is hard even on top of her clothes.

Seria's fingers spread. She's kneading with her nipples using her thumb and index finger scissor.

「Naaa!」

As expected, Seria is weak in her chest. Though, her lower part is sensitive too, but I know that she feels good from her chest. She played with her nipple for a while and her hand slip under the negligee and caressed it directly at last.

Whole massaging her big chest she plays the nipples with her fingertip. She played her nipples with her finger, bikun her waist jumped.

I confirmed Seria's face, she closed her eyes and was breathing roughly.

Seria's arm hugs her body, playing with her chest and genitals. Her vaginal hole had convulsions wistfully, the love nectar seems to be mixed with a whitish fluid. It seems that she's finally about to climax.

「Ah, it's no good yet, Cumming!」

She turned her arm on her chest to knob her nipples tightly, then rubbed the clitoris's area with her finger little by little.

Seria's waist rises.

「Aaah! Cumming! Nnn~~~~~!!」

Seria's lovely voice stifles a smile and her whole body twitched. New love nectar gushed out from insides and created a new stain on the sheets. She finally exhausted herself.

Seria's body stiffened and collapsed in the bed. Then, she muttered to herself being tired.

「What am I doing?...」

「Isn't it masturbation? You don't know it?」

When I appeared in response to Seria's mutter, Seria flew up on the bed.

「Mugu!」

「Don't raise your voice」

I blocked Seria's mouth that's about to shout with my hand.

Seria opened her eyes wide in surprise and corrected the hem of her negligee in panic. When she nodded that she won't shout, I released my hold, then Seria hid her body in the sheets.

「P-please don't surprise me. Also, since when you're here!?!」

Seria seems to handle the trick calmly without any difficulty. 2 If it's normal voice, we don't have to worry as the door is thick.

「When? Just a while ago」

「Y-you saw it?」

「Perfectly」

「N~~~!!」

Embarrassed from being seen, Seria hid her head on the sheets.

If you do that, my inner sadism tingles.

「Starting by herself is just cold hearted princess. Or did you expect me to come so you prepared?」

I brought my face close to the sheets and whispered to Seria. When I thought about the white mountain jumping3, the mountain began to mumble.

「Y-you're wrong. That's not it」

「Then, why are you doing it by yourself? You didn't feel so much yesterday so it accumulated?」

「You're wrong」

「Could it be, that you remembered me and your body ached?」

「.....」

Silence means yes. It seems that it's the correct answer.

「Is that so? When you remembered that I pierced you, your pussy ached. Then, you can't endure it so you touched yourself, then what's next is the slithering. Aren't you cute?」

「...There's nothing cute there. It's embarrassing」

「No, no, you're cute enough. You're too cute that you made me excited」

「Hyaa!」

When I stroked Seria's cute ass above the sheets, the mountain jumped.

「Please don't touch me」

「Nope. I'll do what I want」

「Please stop」

「If I stopped you'd do it by yourself right? Then I'll do it」

「...I won't do it」

「Nope, you will」

「I won't」

「Yup」

「Not」

「Yup」

「Not」

Seria and I repeatedly answered like a kid. Though I repeat, my hand doesn't stop. I massaged Seria's small ass then put a finger on a hole that's not fiddled yet.

「Kya! What are you doing!? That's the wrong one!」

The white mountain pulsed again. I let my hand follow the movement.

「Where do you like it?」

「Anywhere is no good. Please stop」

「Then I'll continue」

I loosened her asshole as is. When I push my finger to open the constrictor, Seria finally interrupted.

「Hyaa! Wait, wait a moment. At least the front!」

Seria jumps out the sheet while holding her ass. She jumped out and met my eyes, then withdrew again with her face deep red.

「What's in front? Continue speaking. Why do you want it in the front hole?」

When I pat her ass again, Seria guarded her anus with one hand as small resistance. I continued to caress her ass on top of her hand.

「There's nothing. Please stop already」

「I can't stop after you show me something like that. Move your hand and leave that. We'll continue」

「No thanks. I'm already satisfied with myself. Shouldn't you just do

yourself? I heard that men do this too」

Seria had a strong resistance today. She's used to me on the third day as expected. But, she's not calling anyone, so she knows the line I don't permit.

「Where did you hear about doing oneself? Lululie?」

「It's impossible to ask Lululie about this!」

Well, you can't ask a precious friend about such a thing. If you asked something erotic she would completely understand it.

「Then who? Lion? Or is it some servant over there?」

「...I read it in a book」

「Book? So you examined it specially」

「...Yes」

She's quite diligent. When I looked around, I found a book in the bedside. At the cover 『Ruined county's princess rape play~I'm a caged bird~ Matifa Lau Ell Pito's book』 is written. Hey, isn't this an eronovel?

「Could this be the book you read?」

「.....Yes」

「Ah, I see. Well, it's no question why you masturbated」

「...Please don't say it uuu」

Seria kept quiet after the last word. No one reads an erotic novel, remembers that they were raped and was witnessed masturbating, she can't come out anymore with this.

「I won't think anything bad of you so be relieved. It's very usual to read such novels. There's much more dangerous people in this world」

Especially Cathy. That fellow reads SM-related books and goes in and out of an underground shop. She's the real deal.

However, the stimulation is too strong for a pure princess.

「No. I'll die. Please kill me」

Seria completely turned in negative mode. I'm troubled. It's a good play but I might as well thrust in as a play. It can't be helped.

「Listen up and come out already. If you don't come out I'll make the knights of the table know about this book」

「!!」

When I softly whispered in her hear, Seria showed a teary-eyes among the sheets. Seria clings to me and begs for mercy.

「Just, please spare me from that. Please」

「Then listen to me. First of all, come out. The talk is after that」

「Uu, you're cruel...」

Seria slips out the sheets tearfully and sat down on the center of the bed. Now, it's fun time.

Chapter 29: Princess Seria becomes a bit aggressive

「What should I do?」

Seria came out of the sheets while asking. Since she learned sufficient erotic stuff so I can ask her anything now.

「Would you try to dance naked this for the time being?」

「Please don't joke around!」

She's angry. She's quite angry.

I just thought that it's great to see your breast sway.

It seems to be still too early for Seria. Since it can't be helped, let's do it next time.

I first put my hands on Seria's clothes. I lift the transparent negligee that faintly displays her body line out of her head. I unfastened the panties on her waist and her pussy became bare.

Seria hid her breasts and thighs with her hand as she was embarrassed to be seen naked as expected. However, she can't just hide her voluptuous chest, a deep valley and an underboob came into view

I took off my pants and displayed my erect penis to Seria. Though Seria seems embarrassed she looked at it patiently.

「I'm tired today so I really don't want to move that much. That's why Seria will be the one moving」

I lied down next to Seria and gave her an order. Seria frowned because she's looking at a dark red mushroom growing to the sky.

「Uuu~ Again?...」

「Yeah, suck it again. If it's not lubricated well it would be hard」

「Haa...Understood」

When Seria gave a sigh as if giving up, she lifted her silver hair to her

ear and kissed my lips.

「...Eh?」

A light peck came. However, I never experienced a sweet kiss that melted me away.

I leaked a strange voice on her unexpected surprise attack. I didn't think that Seria would kiss me. I was taken by surprise because I didn't think that Seria would move voluntarily according to my order.

If it had been a magic attack I could've responded without problems. But the kiss was too natural, I never felt any resistance or avoidance at all. However, why a kiss? Furthermore, from Seria?

「I was taught by mom to start it with a kiss. It seems that it's the correct answer. So you make that kind of face too」

Seria laughed like a child whose mischief was successful. Are you delighted that you teased me? Or is my face really that stupid?

「You got me there. I did tell that you'll be the one moving」

「I'll still resist. I don't want to be threatened and have sex with you by force. That's wrong. However, I can't defy you. That's all the best that I can do right now」

Seria moves on the gap between my feet while speaking, then she brought her face close to my grotesque penis. Where did the might go? She returned to a timid girl suddenly.

As expected, she's resisting to take the penis which reeks of male odor and is dripping pre-cum in her mouth.

「Uu...I'll put it in my mouth again」

「You studied right? Did this appear in the book you had?」

「It was written. Adults really do such things...」

It seems that Seria had climbed the stair to adulthood.

Usually, knowledge comes first, but Seria had experience before it. However, the knowledge caught up to the experience and she accepted it

as common sense. Although the common sense is a bit biased, but there's no problem to push Seria's back.

Seria got down on all fours and made her tongue crawl on the swelling penis. She often hesitated to lick the glans, she extend her tongue to the rod and moved her head. When it hit a good place, my penis throbbed, Seria confirmed the point and felt it without missing the reaction.

When she deliberately licked the back muscle carefully while holding the rod, she made up her mind and put the glans on her mouth.

She moved her tongue on the back muscle and the sensitive part she found a while ago.

「*Chupa*...*Churu**Juru*...*Chu*, Churururu... lief thwis?」

Seria looked up asking for impressions while sucking my cock.

Her adaptability and her speed on understanding is wonderful. She still have ways to when it comes to technique, but she's prepared to make her partner feel it. Feelings are important in sex! Although I want to teach and bully her if it can't be helped, but it seems she reached it on her own.

She originally has a gentle character from the start, I'm surprised that she's not forgetting the rapist.

「You got better than before. Is this the result of your study?」

「Fonninofuemashia」2

「That's an amazing book. Oh well, keep it up」

「okay...*Churu*...*Juu*, Chupo...*Jyururu*...*Rerorero*...」

Seria resumed the fella again. She sticks to the tip while stroking the rod. Every time she licks the glans with her rough tongue, electricity runs through my spine. Seria doesn't move her face too much, she moves her tongue like a vacuum, rising my sexual excitement.

Lying down on a bed exclusive for royalty, then a cute princess giving me a fella, it's like a dream.

I can't help but pat the head of the lovely princess whose sucking my

penis.

「Yeah, that's great. Move your mouth just like that, hold the rod firm and stroke it」

「Okay」

Seria changed the movement of her tongue to wrapping my glans. She crawls on the surroundings of the sensitive part and she attacks me with a successive stimulation.

Trying and investigating various ways is good.

I want to teach more on the diligent princess, but unfortunately I'm at my limit.

「I'm about to cum soon. Since you did your best I'll let you choose where I would release it. Where do you like it? Mouth or face?」

A reward is necessary for a hardworking child. A reward called semen.

「Puha, on my face please. It's difficult to drink because it smells like fish...」

「Well that's true. Then, do your best and move your hand. If you can't make me cum with your hands I'll do it inside your mouth」

「Yes., Like this?」

Seria squeezes my penis and stroked her hands. The hesitation from a while ago fades away and she's stimulating my penis firmly. It's completely different than doing it by myself, my waist raised naturally.

「Ah, yes. I'm about to cum」

「Uhm, this position」

I grabbed Seria's head and set it in front of my penis. Seria doesn't rest her hand while complaining. Her round pupils are nailed on the pre-cum dripping out of my penis.

「Ejaculating!」

「Kyaa!」

ByuruByuru Semen polluted Seria's beautiful face. Her silver hair, the gentle eyes and her small mouth is decorated with a white cloudy liquid.

「Uu, my face is sticky...」

Seria wiped her eyelids of with her finger then looked for something to wipe her hands.

I took off the sheets, negligee and the underwear for the princess to wipe off. Since I thought it's a good thing, I shoved the hand on Seria's pink lips.

「Fugu! W-what are you doing!」

「It's manners to lick semen. If you don't want it, then keep it in your face until you take a shower」

「That's...」

Of course, there's no such manner but Seria won't know it anyway. Let's enjoy the semen decoration today.

Seria scooped the semen down her palm before it fell on her bed, then she reluctantly put them in her mouth.

「It's bitter...the smell...」

The taste of semen doesn't seem to be palatable to the royalty as expected. I can let her drink it often, but unfortunately I have Cathy, Misha and Matifa around so it's fine. I want Seria to stay hateful of it by any means. It's fun to make a child who dislikes it drink.

Seria is struggling desperately with the semen. As expected it would feel bad if it's in the eye and mouth, but she wiped the dripping immediately from the top. In the end, most of the semen is carried to her mouth.

I get impatient so I reached to Seria's waist.

「Kya, what's the matter?」

「Come to the top a bit more」

I had Seria straddle on my waist. In this position, my half erect penis is grazing Seria's pussy.

Seria pulls her waist away to refuse contact.

「Uhm, it got small so can we end this? Any more than this is no good」

「Don't worry. If you make it feel good it will go energetic again. If you do, you'd feel good too so there's no problem」

「It's full of problems...」

I rub my waist ignoring Seria's complains. Seria's small vagina that's wet from masturbating a while ago is still drolling. Her body is really honest.

「Even if you don't like it in your mouth your body is feeling it」

「N, it's because you're forcing me. I'm not feeling it at all」

「Nevertheless, you're lewd since you masturbate」

「It's a lifetime blunder...」

Seria hangs her head and curls her body. She hid her face with her beautifully long silver hair. She can't endure that she's been seen masturbating. Maintaining this story while playing with her would be fun.

「Then, I'll have the lewd princess insert it by herself」

I request insertion to the depressed Seria while grinning.

「By myself?」

「Yeah, that's right. I've already told Seria that I'm tired today right? That's why you will put my penis in your vagina by yourself and you would move your waist to make me feel good. Incidentally, you would feel good as you move. It feels even better than masturbation」

I won't move and the princess would feel good, it's a wonderful win-win situation. Since Seria would make me a meat vibrator, she would enjoy it as she like, it's easy. I force my penis that became hard to hurry up Seria.

「I can't, ah, do that」

「Why? You won't know if you don't try?」

「No, it was written in the book that the lady that stays on top... That's not it, you can't do this if you're not married」

Seria doesn't give up on convincing me. She's making a speech with her crotch wet, but she's probably serious.

I can give her an idea that there's no problem as long as there's love, but I can't just lip service her. Sex is just a mere copulation. The person added more meaning to it, and I don't intend to add love to the act of Seria.

「Then I'll expose to the capital that you're masturbating³ The next time you get out of town, men would look at you with such eyes. Your popularity would rise even more. Isn't that great?」

「!! It's not good! Why are you saying those things...」

「It's because you're not listening to me. I'll really expose it if you're too persistent. You being sensitive on the chest, loves to be poked deep inside your vagina, you loving to drink semen very much」

「The last one is different!⁴」

After a small cry, Seria noticed that her tongue made a slip.

「Then hurry up and do it. I'll go out if you hesitate. Then I will really expose you」

「UU, why am I doing this...」

Seria stretched her hand on my cock that's patiently enduring and lead the tip to her wet pussy.

Chapter 30: Princess' excuse

「Nu...」

Seria slowly drops her waist in a hesitating manner then, zubo-zubo my penis is being swallowed. At the same time my penis is wrapped up with a warm feeling, countless folds tangled as if they waited impatiently. Seria's vagina is completely in it feels really good.

Seria can cum with just her breasts but her vagina won't be satisfied with just masturbation. Her vagina that's filled sucks the penis.

「Ooou, this is...」

「Nn...Any further is impossible.」

It's just a bit more before the tip but the tip touched the depths. Seria makes a painfully distorted face and her feet is slightly trembling. When I pushed my waist all the way up, Seria's body jumped.

「Hyaa!」

「Move as you like afterwards. It's okay to push your weight on me」

「Haahaa..., okay, Nnn~」

Seria's hand holds to my chest and awkwardly moves her waist up and down. I can see my penis skewers Seria's vagina from the bottom. Sometimes I thrust from the bottom and Seria's body jumped. Her breast shakes, it's a nice view.

「NN...This, it's deep and it feels good...」

Let her do as she wants for a while, Seria run out of breath and found a good place. She grinds her waist lewdly, and my glans rub the same place in her vagina.

「Is it good there?」

「Ah! Yes, the other side of my inside is being rubbed, Ahn, getting my insides pierced feels good...」

Seria's face melt away and waves her waist in search for pleasure. She

pushed her pubis against my belly, my penis is being swallowed inside tightly.

The figure of someone embarrassed from being seen masturbating can't be seen anymore. It's just a lewd girl whose feeling good from the man's penis.

「Do you really like my penis? Which is better, masturbating or this?」

「Nnn! It's wrong, it's because you're ordering」

「It's not different. So, which do you like better, masturbating or sex?」

「I don't, Nn, like both. This is just, even though I don't want it, my body moves without my permission. Aaahn!」

Seria doesn't stop her waist even though she shook her head. The love nectar increased, and her movement becomes faster.

Her breasts dance intensely as her waist move faster. In front of me are two grand breasts swaying magnificently. I grabbed those breasts and rubbed it.

「Yaan~. Not my breasts! I'm cumming again. I'm cumming with a penis inside me!」

「It's different right? You inserted and moved on your own today. You're masturbating on my penis」

「Don't say it. I didn't masturbate!」

「Didn't you do it? Don't deny that」

I played with her hard nipples.

She kept shaking her head saying no as she denies my words. I wonder if she involuntarily masturbated.

「Hyaa! You're wrong. Aahn! Because you keep doing this so I can't forget ah! When I read that book, I felt itchy and my hand won't stop! Aaaaah! That's why it's the book's fault!! I'm not feeling, ah, ah, ah, aaaaaaaa!!」

Seria's words no longer make sense. I tested and loosen stopped my hold

on Seria's waist but, Seria kept shaking her waist continuously. It's not a movement to make me feel good, instead she moves to indulge herself in pleasure.

Seria is completely drunk on pleasure. She experienced sex, she remembers the pleasure, she turned to a bitch¹ asking for pleasure greedily.

At this rate, she's no different from a bitch² I'd be troubled if she turned to someone who opens their legs to anyone. It's necessary to train her a little.

「You look like you feel so good. Are you cumming already?」

「Cumming? Ah! I'm cumming! I'm cumming~! Ah, Cum, cum, cumiiiiing!!」

Seria bent her body backwards while riding on top of me as she exhaust herself. I didn't touch her chest nor move my waist. Seria felt good and climaxed by her own will. She certainly came on her own.

I called to the Seria that's immersed in the reverberation.

「Seria, you danced while naked properly. Did my penis really feel that good?」

「Fue...?3」

Seria's brain is senile so she can't think well.

「Hey, Look at the mirror」

「Eh?...ah」

Seria looked at herself in the mirror. One girl, sitting astride a man and exhausted in pleasure is reflected in there.

Seria finally understood the situation and her face dyed in despair.

「Ah...I-It's not... I didn't feel...fue」

When Seria noticed that she reached climax, she began to weep denying that.

Seria should've been raped, yet the story changed when she moved her

waist by herself and felt pleasure. With this, it's like Seria pushed me down to make herself feel good. Then the victim and assailant got reversed.⁴ She's just a a lewd girl.

That's why she can't admit it.

I don't intend to make her admit. In this act, I will be the assailant till the end. The ruler is me and Seria is my toy. I can't allow her to misunderstand it.

I hugged the crying princess and we switched positions.

I talked to the sobbing Seria while in missionary position.

「Seria, listen to me. You are being threatened by me. You must certainly obey what I say. Isn't that right?」

「Hiku...Yes」

Seria nods while crying.

「Even now I pierce and rape you, I'm only forcing you by my orders」

「...Yes」

Kyuuto⁵ Her vagina has reacted

「That's why you don't have to be afraid of pleasure because it's all my fault. I'm raping you so you feel good. You get it?」⁶

「...Yes」

The pleasure, hate and fear Seria feels is all my fault and only granted by me.

「That's why you did nothing wrong. I'm the wrong one here. I will rape you in this bed before you sleep every night. If your body aches because you remembered whenever you enter the bed at night, it's all because of me. You are just being played by me. You hear?」

「.....Yes」

I carved to Seria's weak heart that she came on her masturbation entirely because of me. With me as her excuse, Seria's hear would be dependent on me. While declining me, it's impossible for Seria to live

without me. It's impossible to escape from me.

「I'll move. Since I didn't a while ago, I will cum this time. You only have to think on how to make me feel good」

「...Yes」

Seria, given an excuse became docile. I moved my waist slowly then Seria began to move her waist to match.

I wipe the semen that remained on her mouth and gave her small lips a kiss. I pushed my tongue and opened through Seria's lips to invade. I push the surface of her tongue, I licked from the back to scoop out saliva then Seria did the same and scooped mine. We both soaked our lips and mixed the saliva to drink then mix again.

「Haa, you became assertive」

「It's because you ordered me」

Seria obeys me and decided to use the excuse that I'm forcing her. Her not resisting is boring, but oh well, it's fine for today. Embracing each other like lovers is also fun.

Although the ejaculation feeling increased when I inserted it, I can still bear it and moved my hips. I rub the place where Seria felt it a while ago, I rub on her insides and pushed my glans on her uterus.

「Here?」

「Ah, it feels good there. Why do you know?」

「You rubbed it yourself a while ago」

「Ahn! But, it was painful before.」

「It's because you were using magic that time. That's why, don't you dare use that magic okay?」

「Nn, I won't use it. I don't want to feel that pain anymore」

「Oooh」

Recalling the fear from the wagon, Seria's pussy tightened around my penis. It tightened the whole penis from the glans to the root so my

sperm wells up quickly.

Seria must've noticed the change too.

「Is this good?」

「It feels really nice. I'm gonna release it already」

「Ahn, Me too, I felt good again」

「Feel as much as you like. It's an order」

「...Yes」

I raised the piston speed. Seria shakes her hips too and squeezes her vagina tightly.

However, it's not enough. I must carve the pleasure in Seria today.

I reached my hand on her twin mountains, pinched her nipples and massaged her breast. I stimulate the clitoris with the other hand at the same time.

「Ah, Ah, Ah, Ah, don't, my voice—」

I attacked the locations I know Seria preferred.

Immediately, Seria's voice grow big that she worried if the voice was heard outside. Even if she can endure this, she can't suppress her voice.

Then, Seria stretched her hand to my head and drew it to her mouth. A passionate French kiss from Seria.

「N...」

I pressed Seria's small body to an impossible posture.

I repeat the piston with a mating press position.⁸ I hold Seria down and can no longer move from the piston. However, Seria accepted it and she locked her legs on my waist. It's a love hold.

It stirs up my excitement badly.

I hammered Seria's hips while exchanging a French kiss. Seria's vagina tightens and convulses each time I thrust my penis on her womb.

Soon, we both reached our limits.

My penis pulsates. Seria's vagina trembles at the same time.

Seria noticed it and clings her foot strongly. In response to that, I thrust to the innermost part of Seria's vagina.

Then we both reached climax at the same time.

「Nu!!」

「Nnnnn~~~~!!」

Byurubyururururu!! Byururu I vigorously emitted sperm in Seria's womb. Seria's whole body convulsed and accepted the ejaculation in her innermost part.

We exchanged a kiss to enjoy the aftertaste for a while, and we separated our mouths when we calmed down.

「Haa, haa, haa」

「Haa, haa, haa」

Both of us gasped for breath. Seria's face is charmed. I'm sure I have the same face.

We separated our bodies to fix our breathing. I moved by myself after all. That's why my body is wrapped up by fatigue.

I looked at Seria who had the same feeling, then Seria looked at me.

「Just like your order, I made you cum. I felt really good too. I became crazy. This and that, are all your fault」

Seria admitted that she felt good while making an excuse. She admitted that she felt good because of me.

But, It's not enough.

「But don't forget it, I'm the one who raped you」

「Yes, I know. I won't forgive you. That's a once and for all kind of thing」

Seria clearly rejected me. She stiffened her loose face, she took the pride of a royalty and faced me.

「That's fine. That's how you should be」

The princess won't forget the pleasure as a woman either after learning it. Her noble and gentle heart, no matter how I dirty it, it won't succumb and continue to remain clean. That's princess Seria.

Normally, it's fine for me to dirty her, but I desperately want that9

「Then let's go for another round」

「Eh...Please wait a moment! Didn't I say that it was once and for all!?!」

「That's why I'll do it」

「No! Wait, release me!」

「Guehehehe」10

After that, I locked the joints of Seria whose trying to escape then violated her lying back. After all, Seria must be with me.

*

1. Mesu – Female Animal.

2. ビッチ

3. Fueeee?

4. Ren is gonna file a rape case against Seria, take that Tumblr!

5. SFX: Tightly.

6. Next level NTR denial.

7. I Ren Kirishima orders you to cum!

8. 種付けプレス of 体勢のままピストンを繰り返す。

9. The gentle Seria.

10. No, seriously, he did say 「ぐへへへへ」

Chapter 31: Princess knew

「I-I'm tired...」

「Uu...Inside again...」

It was hard to pin down the struggling Seria with so my body is left with fatigue. Thanks to that, my body hurts.

I who finished the act cleaned my body with towel.

Then when I put on my clothes, I spoke to the depressed Seria who is hiding herself in the sheets.

「You, shouldn't be afraid of my thing anymore」

「That's true, after the third time I'm already used to it. And when I thought about the first day, other than doing naughty things with me, you helped me, so I understood that you're selfish. You're cruel when doing H but, uhm, gentle.....」

Seria answered while covering her face. It was hard to hear the last part but she's just shy.

Certainly, other than the rapist, I'm her benefactor. Though, everything is ruined because of rape.

「I did think hard the day before yesterday. Your appearance while I banging semen in your womb, then fainting is miserable」

「Please don't say it specifically! I never want that again, also it's because I used magic...」

The last lines weren't clear as she's mumbling in embarrassment. Certainly, it won't be a tragedy if that magic wasn't used. At first I intend to stop after I felt good.

「Anyway! You cold-bloodedly murdered people, then raped a lady so you're the worst person」

「Certainly」

「Nevertheless, you saved me and you're also investigating. If you didn't

help us that time I don't know what would happen tous... At least it isn't worse than the current results」

「That's true」

Lululie would be gangbanned in the place, as for Seria, her virginity would be safe at least. Thinking about it, I'm tolerant as I just took Seria's virginity. I want you to thank me more.

「My brothers are in dispute, I've heard that the castle is divided into two. The only one supporting me are Lululie and Lion. I don't know what other people think」

「Can you trust Lion?」

「Lion is fine. He doesn't take any side since he's too strong, nobody can go near him too. He's trying to protect his pride as a knight alone. If I would say, he's an ally of justice」

「The complete opposite of me」

Lion seems to be trusted. I don't know what this guy thinks in the back, Lion might be just as what Seria said.

That fellow would carry out his ideal. He's not compatible with me. That's why he can be trusted.

While nodding alone, Seria turned around slowly and dropped an oversized bomb.

「However, I don't think that's the case Other worlder, Ren Kirishima-san」

「.....」

「.....」

「.....What?」

Time stopped.

I didn't tell Seria my name when she helped me before. Only those who are close with me knows that I'm from a different world.

Three years ago, when I came over this world and met her we did self-

introduction, but my features from those days are already gone. My height grew, my physique grew from thin to something muscular. Also my face changed before I knew it. The only thing remained is my black hair and the no magic.

If I returned on my original world, even my parents won't recognize me.

The human she meet from three years ago shouldn't notice. That's right. This must be a trick question.

「W-who's that?」

「Do you really think I didn't notice it? When I first saw you I noticed it already. You changed so much in these three years, but you still have no magical power at all, also your atmosphere when I just examined Lululie was similar. If observed well, your eyes, eyebrows and your voice didn't change」

「No No No. Why do you remember such a place? We only met once three years ago? Normally you won't remember small details!」

Does Seria have a perfect memory ability? In a world with magic it's not strange if it happened, but I've never seen someone with that kind of ability until now.

However, I understood that it's not a bluff. My real nature certainly came out.

To prove it, Seria began to talk about her memories.

「I can't forget such a strong encounter. When I thought the noisy knight surrounded me, a naked man appeared in front of my eyes. I heard that he was an otherworlder, he told be in detail that I believed that it's true. I also remember all the stories of the otherworlder that time. I wanted to see him all this time, it's regrettable that it's like this」

「W-w-w-w-w-wait a moment. 」 C-c-c-calm down f-for a bit」

「We'll return as is. Please calm down. The knights of the table would notice!」

I breathed deeply just as told. I inhaled deeply once again, then the

smell of a man and flower trickled my nostril. It's the smell of the semen stuck on her silver hair. Yup, no good, me.

「Sorry, I was confused for a moment」

「That's not a moment」

She retorted with an amazed look. Strange, are our roles reversed?

「Let me organize it for a bit. You knew me three years ago. That's why you noticed my true nature. And nobody knows about me apart from you. Am I right?」

「Yes, that's right. I don't understand so I didn't tell anyone」

I felt relieved.

My real nature shouldn't be exposed to influential people.

Assassin, thief, peeping tom, lingerie thief, rapist, pervert, a huge murderer, a fake adventurer, lolicon, Cathy's owner, flying human, and invisible gentleman or a some dangerous title for the human with supernatural power Ren Kirishima. I'm an unknown presence. I think it's stupid.

But if this comes to light, I would be arrested and would be investigated thoroughly. A torture brainwashing drug medication hell waits for me. Then I would be executed and fall in true hell.

That's why my life would be over if my secret is handed over.

「Absolutely don't tell anyone. If you expose me I'll be sure to take everything important from you」

「Taking my first time is already enough. You too, please don't take anything important from me. Especially, if you lay your hand on Lululie, I'd really expose you」

Seria spoke with a smile

Therefore, why am I threatened?

I can't really lay my hands on Lululie. Then, my elf sisters winning over plan becomes meaningless too. It's a waste not to lay hands on those two

beauties.

I think about something. Can I compromise? I need to find my way out.

Should I tell her that Lilith almost got kidnapped? But, doing so she would know that I made contact with the elf sisters. That's not good. I want to advance my plans in secret.

Let's keep quiet for the time being. I must answer her with something.

「I-I won't do such things」

「That's extremely suspicious. Did you already lay your hands on them? I won't forgive you if you do」

Seria sent a glare. But, I answered in confidence.

「I didn't do anything so be relieved. Also I came here every night to gather information so I have no leisure」

I looked at Seria's eyes and said it clearly. The only thing I can do is intimidation and bluff.

We stared at each other, then Seria broke out.

「That's true. I'll believe your words for now」

「Don't worry. I'm not going to lay a hand on them as long as you're obedient」

「Jeez, I can't honestly believe you say such things」

It's good for the time being.

However, I should take measures when exposed.

First, the king and the two marquis houses. I swear to grab their weakness so they don't interfere when I capture Lululie. If that happens, I won't be afraid even if I get exposed. I'll be free to do what I want.

「You're thinking something bad again.」

「W-what do you mean?」

Not just Misha, but Seria can also read my heart. Is it really obvious in my face?

「I really wish it wasn't clear. When you helped me, I was really scared, but glad at the same time. Yet, when it comes to you, you attacked with your greed, then do naughty things, then threatened me. Really, why are you—」

I felt a faint magic from outside the window. The concealment is almost perfect, but as long as there's magical power, they can't hide it from leaking. Normal people would not notice it, but my sixth sense perceived it precisely.

「Wait, Seria. —Matifa, stop hiding and come out」

「Oh, you noticed even by that much? You prevented Misha's surprise attack but you have a quite a sharp sense」

「Eh, from where?」

The window opened automatically. Then a beautiful half moon is reflected on the other side. But, Matifa certainly exists on a place where nobody seems to be. I hear her footsteps as evidence. Then, Matifa appeared out of nothing.

Perhaps, it's a magic that imitates my ability. Her principle is refraction? She doesn't seem to disappear to substance like me.

Still, that doesn't change the fact that that magic is a very advanced magic. As expected this girl's case is different.

「Seria, You were bad there. Since I heard an interesting story, You made me come」

「Matifa-sama, I don't mind it but...」

Seria looked at me and Matifa alternately. Her eyes are looking for an explanation of our relationship.

「The two of us are acquaintances so don't mind it. The matter is...let's see, who's the mistress?」

「M-mistress? But I'm not going out with him...」

Seria looked at me suspiciously. But, Matifa answered the question faster than I can respond.

「Don't worry Seria. I can't be his first so I'm the mistress. In short, I was rejected once. Can you believe that he rejected this cute girl? His penis really had grown」

「Peni...! Matifa-sama, what are you saying!」

「Isn't that true? Normally one would kneel to propose on a beautiful girl like me. Yet, he refused me. In addition, while we're having sex on the bed. In addition, he declared to stop the mistress matter. He's really a cruel man」

「Wha! What does this mean!?!」

Seria scowls and presses me with her deep red face. Magical power builded up and a silver colored aura boils. Her angry face is also lovely, but the magical power is no joke. As expected of a royalty. Even she's 14 years old her magic amount reaches class-B I'm going to die.

「Wait, suppress your magic. You'd be found out」

「Don't worry. I strengthened the barrier when I entered the room. Both the sound and magical barriers are perfect. Nobody would notice even if you cry or suffer. You can persuade, beg for your life, or resort to force, suit yourself. Yeah, that's right. If you're going to use force, add me」

「Thanks but no thanks!」

Matifa sits on the bed nonchalantly and crossed her legs. She's smirking as she pretends to be a mere speculator. This Witch!

「I'm asking what does this mean. Ren-san. Did you involve others after all? You did lay your hands on women other than me!?!2」

Shit. The relationship I build might collapse in an instant. Why did I rush in to this bloodbath?

「Wait, calm down Seria. Don't listen to Matifa. She's a witch. She's just disturbing and amusing herself」

「Matifa-sama doesn't tell a lie. You did lay your hand on Matifa? Even though she looks like a small child!!3」

Certainly, her appearance on the outside is 10 years old. If I laid my

hands on her I won't escape from the Lolicon slander.

However, hearing the word 'child' Matifa felt offended. Shit, she's also becoming grumpy.

「S-she's a respectable lady. A man wouldn't be able to refuse if invited by such a beautiful woman like her. I didn't have the right of veto. It can't be helped!」

Rather, it was me that was played with! I'm the victim! I want to cry those, but I read the mood as expected.

The pressure of the two beautiful girls are fearful. The unpleasant sweat flowed on my back. I want to run away right now.

「Then you admit that you laid your hands on her? You're the worst!4 Can't you just leave me alone and make Matifa-sama happy!5」

「Oh, Seria you said something good. That's right, you. Make me happy」

Seria raised her fist and made a fist figure repeatedly. It might be childlike, but her magic is in murder class. Will I die if she swings downwards? A red fruit splits open and this room would become a spot of a bizarre looking murder case? You get it?

Since I don't want to die from such a thing, I stand and hold Seria's arm with all my effort. However, I was no match for her power and was pushed. I still manage to induce the power, I held the joint and forcefully stopped the movement of her arm.

Then the aftermath of Seria's magic was stopped somehow. The magic burst out without hitting, then the wind blew away for several meters.

「Kaha!」

「H-Huh?」

I fixed my posture and fell on the floor soon enough. It's a shame that I can't use flight ability in such case. If my body can't take off, I can't use it.

「Seria is bold. If you made a wrong stop he'd be dead. No, Should I compliment him for stopping it without running away? Well, we have to

adjust the next thing well. He doesn't have magical power after all」

「Eh, uhm, yes, I'm sorry...」

Matifa rebuked Seria, Seria apologized obediently.

The bottom of the carpet is soft and fluffy. I who got off with a light bruise had my body lifted somehow.

「You get it right? I can't keep up with you as I have no power. I can't win against Matifa on arguments, so I'm not a partner you can't defy. Matifa's words are correct but that's not all. Matifa invited me, then I refused her. Although we had a relationship in body but that's the same for us. It's an adult relationship just like you thought」

「Err, that's...」

Seria looked at me confused. Matifa stood up and walked to me while laughing in satisfaction.

「Well, let's leave it like that. Seria, what this one is saying is true. He refused my temptation. But that's because I'm lonely, so I had him accompany me. That's why I'm not a mistress nor a lover. In addition it's just one day. You don't have to worry about my body. This is much durable than you think」

Matifa used healing magic when she touched me. The back pain goes away in an instant. When the treatment ends, I clenched Matifa's hand and stood up.

「Uhm, I'm sorry. I overdid it...」

「Don't mind it. I'm used to this much」

Seria's mind seems to have settled too. I escaped the dilemma for the time being. I thought I would die.

「Well then, let's go to the main subject」

When I and Seria settled, Matifa butted in. Seria and I confirmed with a nod and Matifa continued her words.

「Ren Kirishima, is it true that you're an otherworlder?」

「.....」

「.....」

Shit. It was revealed on the person I never wanted to reveal. I might really die.

Chapter 32: The witch knew too

「Ren Kirishima, is it true that you're an otherworlder?」

Seria fell silent on Matifa's words. Should I deceive her or tell her the truth.

「What—」

「You don't need to lie」

As soon as I try to deceive her, a hateful magic overflowed from Matifa. Dark aura fills the room and clings to my whole body.

Cold sweat breaks out from my whole body. I can't move a finger. I can't go against her. I'd be killed if I defied her.

My instincts sounds like an alarm bell telling me that I should escape right now. But, where should I run? How?

This monster would chase me anywhere. She would chase me by means I don't know, she would sieze me with magic I can't defy and she'd handle me as she like.

Running is impossible. I can't do anything but say it obediently. I'll be a servant ant behave just as she wish. That's the only way to survive.

But—.

「What are you saying? There's no such thing as otherworlder. Are you believing that?」

「Wha!?!」

When I pretend ignorance while laughing on my nose, Seria raised a voice of surprise.

「Fufu, you're really interesting. That's right, if you ask me if I believe, then what would be your response if I say I don't? I had been studying magic for long but the presence of an otherworlder can't be confirmed. There were people who claimed that they're otherworlders in the past but all of them are just fraud and insane. It's the same in the books. That's why, I did not believe the existence of other world. I thought you can do

anything with magic, but there's no such thing. Magic is founded with a proper theory. it's confirmed that an upper world and a higher dimension exists and it's possible to interfere. However, if you look through here, I never found any human in this world that's from the other world. Because I'm a researched, I don't believe on something that can't be demonstrated. However, if you're an otherworlder, I would bend my belief」

Matifa slowly reaches for my cheek. I see an illusion that she's swallowing me. I can't move a finger to go against it.

However, I musn't admit it here.

「Isn't it obvious that it's a lie? A made up story」

「I don't understand why you're lying. I won't do anything cruel since you're an otherworlder. I'll just perform an autopsy and peep at your memory. It's okay. I'll be sure to put you back perfectly so be relieved」

Don't just gloss it over. Or rather, how do you intend to do autopsy?

Matifa's small hand crawls on the line of my jaw. Shivering, the fear and pleasure runs through my back and my heart palpitates. My breathing becomes short and my chest feels painful.

Still, I won't be defeated.

「I really don't know otherworlders. It's just a delusion. It's a shame」

「Fufu, you really won't bend with this? You really get more interesting. True, making you say it easily isn't fair. Also, you seem to dislike me. —— then let's go with business. If you give me information I don't know I will give a thing matching to it. Anything is good, money, or even my body. It would be good to lend my power once. Of course, I demand reasonable information. How about it?」

Matifa shrugged her small shoulders and asked sweetly.

Matifa's proposal is information trading. it's not a bad thing for me.

「Talking about information, it should be fine as long as you don't know it right?」

「Yes it is. The value of information is judged by you and me. When the

meaning isn't important to me but it is for you, I'd pay an appropriate consideration. It also applies vice versa. Since it's a contract we can't lie. I want you to be relieved」

Matifa looks into my eyes with a jewel like pupils.

Looking to the bottomless eyes, I'm anxious whether I should contract with the devil. She's inviting me to hell. I wonder if I'm being played by Matifa?

But it's the same thing. Then it's better to bind her with a contract.

「Is the contract a thing growing only for my information? Just what information I will get from you? Would it be reasonable?」

「There's no need to force me. I'm the only one with the duty to pay. However, you may demand something that's been shielded by a contract. It's still quite an advantageous contract for you. I think I'm the one at disadvantage」

Conversely, if I give her information I can ask her anything. The only demerit is the shield of negotiation as Matifa says. But, that's it—.

「Got it. That's good」

「Then we'll complete the deal. Good Good. I was planning to use force in one way or another. Then, do you want something from me?」

Matifa asked me with a smile. Then I decided on what I want.

「Suppress this magical power. I'm at my... limit... 」

My view shakes. My semicircular canals don't work. Is it because I'm standing on the black darkness? Or is it because I've already fallen and I don't know it?

Matifa's beautiful face distorted like the devil.

「Then, why don't you give me some information? Then I'll suppress my magical power」

「Just as I thought! Then how about this. I'm an other worlder!!」

「Yup, I know」

Matifa blankly declared. After all, she's just playing with me when she's confirming if I'm an otherworlder.

Dammit! She's really a devil.

「Hahaha, I'm joking. I suppressed my magical power so don't worry. So, sleep on the bed」

Matifa suppressed the magical power in the room and laid me down on the bed with her small arms.

Lightheadedly, I take out magical power purification medicine from my waist put it in my mouth. It takes a while till the medicine works, but it should be possible to move with this.

「Uhm, Matifa-sama, is he okay?」

Seria who watched the exchange silently timidly asked.

「Don't worry. it's just magic pollution. Since I took magical power purification medicine I'll be able to move soon. I'm sorry to involve Seria. You we're scared right?」

「That's...yes. It was really scary」

「I see. However you talked to me. Normally, when you feel that kind of magic you shouldn't come close to me, right? After all you have a strong mind」

「No, I'm just used on scary things」

Saying that, Seria looked at me. No no, that person is much more scary than me. I'm a horrific killer, that one is the demon king. Our cases are entirely different.

「Did you overcome the fear of my magical power. That's good, I want to see such spectacle」

Matifa licked her lips then crawled to me who's lying on the bed.

「Matifa, what do you intend to do?」

「A congratulations for the contract. What? You should just lie down and let me do it」

「Matifa-sama?」

Seria doesn't seem to notice Matifa's real intention. But, I know. This girl intends to eat me here now. Furthermore, in front of Seria.

Matifa hold my pants and pulled out my underwear smoothly. It's quick work that I doubt that she has four hands. Poron my withered son is exposed and a lovely scream is heard.

「You.」

「Isn't it okay? I do love you. And you don't hate me either right?」

「There's a time and place for that」

I can't show reverse-rape in Seria's bed. My dignity that fell to the abyss would really be gone. If this happens she won't feel threatened and I won't be able to enjoy Seria.

Seria is overwhelmed by Matifa's reckless action, solidified and can't say anything.

「Aren't those your words. If you don't like it then you should just run away」

「I can't do that. Then I'll tell you something. In my hometown there's a proverb that says when petticoats woo, breeks may come speed It means that men should be doing it no women」

「Certainly, that's correct. If the woman demanded, man should respond on full force. You'd better lose genital function if you refused. If so, I have to pay some compensation right? Let's see, after I eat you you'd be cleaning up? You'd do it by full force」

「Have it your way」

「I will」

I gave up resisting and relaxed my whole body. Just do whatever you like.

Chapter 33: The witch plays

Matifa took off her goth loli dress and her appearance changed to just black underwear. The unbalance of the girl wearing a sexy black underwear brings a dangerous charm. An untouched jewel, the immorality stirs up the excitement.

「Look well Seria. This is an adult relationship. You may participate if you like」

「Matifa-sama!? You can't do that easily!」

Seria tries to stop Matifa in panic. But, she was repelled away in an empty space.

「Ouch!」

「You can't, Seria. If you disturb my pleasure I won't forgive you. In this world, there are some values you don't know. If you don't know it then you shouldn't deny it. Or could it be that you want to say that he's your man? If so then I'll draw back obediently」

「You're wrong!」

Seria denied strongly. I thought she would be acting dere but it seems to be my imagination.

「Then just be quiet. I'll be showing gratitude for you letting me borrow your place so be relieved」

「That's not the problem...」

Seria still wants to say something but she can't make a sound argument against Matifa so she had no choice but to stay silent.

Upon Matifa confirming that Seria became silent, I extend my hand on the top of my waist.

「You did like this with Seria a while ago. Then, should I teach you the difference in technique?」

The feeling of her flesh is being pressed against my dick over the lace underwear. The half erect penis is inserted in her slit, she slowly moves

her waist back and forth to rub the sensitive parts.

She doesn't move her upper body, only her waist is dancing lewdly. Sandwiched between the genital area and the abdomen, even though I don't want it, my penis regained its hardness.

「It became hard. Did you get excited at me?」

「There's no man who wouldn't be excited seeing you naked. You know that and you said it already」

I slowly move my waist, then extend my own hands on Matifa's chest slowly. Matifa's chest is too small for my hand. I extend both of my hands, I rub her plump erect nipples in the center with my thumb and index finger.

「Nnn...You can move already?」

「I'm overworking myself. It's not my hobby being the attacked」

「Fufu, that's conceited. But don't move too much. It's not your imagination that your body is screaming」

Matifa made a finger crawl over my body. From abdomen to my chest, to my upper arm. Then she took both of my arms and kissed the back of the hand. That time, an acute pain attacked my whole body.

「Ga!」

「See? You're overdoing it. You fought so much these past several days right? Just how much magical power you bathed in? How many times you almost died? Now matter how much you recover with magic, that's just half baked phony. There's a limit to the effect. I poured just a bit magical power in your body and you're hypersensitive right now. If it's a healthy body, there won't be any impact, but it will clearly come out in the surface if you have an abnormality in your body. The reason you can't move is because the damage accumulated. Leave this to me and rest for now」

My body no longer listens to me at all. Even if I try to lift my arm, just putting a small amount of power sends pain in my body.

Despite that, my crotch is getting hot and excited from the stimulation. Matifa rubs the texture of the hot lace, the stimulation was more than enough.

It's yearning from hypersensitivity, isn't this 10 times more sensitive!?

Does Matifa want me to go crazy!?

「N, Haa... Fufufu, it seems to be working. Your place's pulsating is being transmitted. You want to shoot it out?」

「Uaaa...」

Matifa seems to be saying something, but I can't hear it well. All of my concentration is placed in my crotch! I want more stimulation. I want to unleash its desire. I want to shoot it out!

My waist shakes every time Matifa rubs her waist. The sensitive penis is conveying unbearable pleasure.

And, I came immediately. Together with the feeling of ejaculation coming from the depths, suddenly the feeling disappeared from my penis.

My sense wasn't paralyzed. Matifa stopped stroking it.

I'm troubled. This is bad. This is half-kill.

I looked under absentmindedly, I saw Matifa showing a smile on her face.

The penis freed is filled with worldly desires and is pulsating.

「You can't shoot it out. You have to release it in the vagina properly, okay? Fufu, don't look at me wistfully. I want to bully you more」

Matifa smiled bewitchingly as she licks her lips while looking at me suffering.

Removing her underwear on one leg, her white skin and pink genitals displayed when she opened her legs wide. Furthermore, when she opened her flirty meat with both hands, transparent liquid pours down on my dick .

「Can you see it? Just by rubbing it on your penis it got like this already」

Matifa reported it obscenely as if she's drunk.

Then, Matifa slowly sits down on the reddish brown penis that's shining with pre-cum and love nectar.

「Kuaaaaaaaa!」

「Haaa! As expected, your penis is big! Naaaaa!」

Matifa's small pussy hole Rip Rip opens wide as she lower her waist. The penis that's on the verge of ejaculation had it's tip pressed hard, a voice leaked from my mouth.

Matifa adjusted the angle of her small waist, the penis is swallowed inside little by little. Shaking the waist back and forth, the friction is too strong because the waist moves around, the adult penis is swallowed to the interior of the vagina.

Every time Matifa makes a small move, random stimulation runs to the penis. It could fire anytime however, the tight opening of Matifa's vagina doesn't allow it. Is she using some magic to not let it out?

「Fufu, you're drooling as if you want to release it already. But, not yet. We have to insert it to the innermost precisely」

Then, Matifa's violating starts. She moves her waist clockwise, then counterclockwise. Every time Matifa moves her intravaginal walls rage, it's pressing hard on an organ somewhere. It's a hard bone, a soft sea of folds, rough meat wall. Every single stimulation urges him to ejaculate, but it's blocked on the root.

It feels like heaven and hell at the same time.

「Kuoooooooo...」 Matifa, I can't anymore. Let me shoot it out...」

「Not yet, haaannn~! Not yet. It hadn't reached the deepest part yet. Nnn!! I won't let you ejaculate until all of me is savored」

「Matifa-sama...Amazing...」

Matifa goes down as she shake her waist little by little. She doesn't do an up-down piston but waving back and forth stiring her vagina.

「Haaaan! Nfuuuuu.... Hauun! Haa. Aaaaaa!」

Matifa eats my penis with her mouth below and enjoys herself. Her beautiful face is warped with lewdness. The connecting part is shut closed but leaks love nectar, the interior is sloppy and boiling, it's telling that it's about to climax soon.

「Haa! Aaahn! Just a bit more. Me too, I'm about to!!」

Matifa is passionately moving. Dancing lasciviously wildly looking as if urging to climax, her small body swallows my penis even deeper. It's believed that the penis won't be able to fit in definitely, yet it swallowed it completely.

「Haaaa, See, all of you ins inside. Ah, Me too, in my deepest place, Nhaa! Let out a lot!!」

The glans is stuck in her uterus, GuiGui, the inside of her pussy is raging. Then, the time came at last.

「Haaaaaaaaa!! Cumming! Gonna cum! Cum, Cum, Cumiiiiiiiiing!!」

「Uaaaaaaaaah!!」

Matifa's vagina shut tight at the same time of her ejaculation, the piled up semen gushed out. The glans was half buried inside her womb, Byurururururu! The sperm spouted vigorously.

「Aaaaaa! Inside, your hot sperm, It's coming! It's pulsating, inside my womb, it's flowing!!」

Matifa bent her back and came to finish on top of me. A dangerous dance of a dangerous girl, the playing and trampling finally finished. It was really dangerous.

I can finally relax after I ejaculate, we already forgot the existence of Seria who's watching us.

Seria looked at me and Matifa dumbfounded. Her right hand extends to her crotch, Kuchu Kuchu, it's making wet sounds. White liquid drips from there, it's probably the semen I let out a while ago.

「You, even though I'm here you're looking at another woman, don't you

think that's rude?」

I inadvertently looked at Seria, the connected Matifa raised a complaint.

「No, that's the end right? Your technique was the best. It was considerably hard」

「Fun. That was my intention but I changed my mind. You, when you looked at Seria you got hard a bit. You can still go on. Then, just get it on till the end」

「Ha? Hey, Stop. It's already impossible—」

「There's no use arguing!」

Matifa began to move her waist again to make the soft me hard again.

My too obedient son got got hard from the stimulation, Matifa violated me once again.

In the end, she squeezed me six times before she released me. She squeezed out my semen with different attacks every time. The last shots were already watery. The humiliation.

「Fuu. Let's leave it like that today」

「Haahaahaahaa...It finally ended...」

I who became mentally whited out, covered my own face, trembling in shame. In the end, I wasn't able to resist and was toyed by Matifa.

「Uhm, are you okay?」

「I'm not okay」

Seria anxiously looked at me. My small son, and me shaking like a virgin would be very funny.

But, Seria. She relaxed her guard.

「Then it's Seria's turn next. It's all right. Since you lent me the place I will give you my gratitude」

「Eh?」

Matifa's demon hands extends to Seria. Then, unable to escape, Seria

was pinned down next to me.

「Matifa-sama, What are you doing!」

「"What?" you say, it's pleasure. You're not satisfied after looking right? But he collapsed already, it may be audacious but I'll be your partner」

「Hyauu!」

Matifa began to lesbian rape my neighbor. However, I can't interfere with that.

I was able to move somehow and left the bed and readied my clothes. Matifa peeled Seria nude and attacked her.

「Hua! Haa...Hyau! Ua,n! Nn! Ah, ah, aaaaaaaaaaaa!!」

She came immediately.

「Yup, you're really sensitive. There's no doubt that you're weak on the breasts, other than that you can feel it just anywhere. It's a developed sensation, but I'm a bit jealous that you're so sensitive. Still, what did you eat to make this breasts this big? I think I have quite the thing but it didn't become this big」

「Nope, You don't have breasts」

Matifa was trying to compete while lifting Seria's breasts, I inserted a tsukkomi. That's not even a competetion. It's not even 1-0 but 100-0, it's clear who's O.

「You're really rude! Even I don't have now it's still growing! Have some bit of delicacy」

「Yan~! Matifa-sama, Wait, pleash wait!!」

Matifa fiddles with Seria's nipples, venting out her anger. This fellow is really a tyrant. Even if her partner is a royalty she has no mercy.

「Sorry for being insensitive. I'll come back later so I'll leave it to you. Be sure to educate her properly」

「Leave it to me. Look forward to your next meeting」

「Please wait a moment! he-help meeeee!」

「Study well」

I exit the window while ignoring the screams of Seria that became Matifa's doll.

Sorry Seria. I can't have an erection anymore.

Chapter 34: Withered Day

My son doesn't react even I see Seria's foolishness. I would just feel miserable if I just say here any longer.

When I stepped outside, not even a sound can be heard at all.

I cancelled the search today as I won't be able to deal with it because of my physical condition.

I jumped from the veranda and cross over the wall in under the cover of the night and returned home.

When I arrived, I changed to my casual clothes quickly and went to Lululie's house this time. The reason is because I'm currently guarding Lululie's house.

I sneaked out because of the work that was left today. Since tomorrow would be a daytime mobilization, I'd be late on the way back and assume that I fell asleep.¹

When I arrived I opened the door with the key Lululie lent me, Misha and Lilith jumped out.

「Master, welcome back」

「Onii-san, welcome back」

The two seems to be sleepy wearing those pajama while rubbing their eyes. Misha is stiff as the size doesn't fit her, Lilith's shoulders dropped. Did you get up expressly?

「I'm home. But you guys should still be sleeping」

The time is almost midnight. It's not a time for children to be up.

「I was talking with Mi-chan. Then, Mi-chan says that Onii-san came back」

「I felt Master's presence. ...Master, did you go to Matifa-sama?」

Misha sniffed my smell. It seems she gets it through smell.

「She's the one who came to me. Let me rest because I kept her

company」

「Un」

「Onii-san's sleeping place is here」

Lilith lead me to the sofa she prepared in the living room and I lied down. The cushion's volume increased than it was in daytime, it's probably Lilith's consideration.

Lilith brought a blanket and called me.

「Sorry. We don't have enough beds」

「It's fine. Adventurers sleep anywhere and I'm not really going to sleep. Isn't Lilith's bed too narrow with Misha?」

「Mi-chan is small and warm so it's fine. It's fun to have someone like a little sister」

「I see. Then if you may」

「Yes, leave it to me!」

Then the two people disappeared and I started my guard duty. I rest my body while half awake² I'm tired today. I must restore my physical strength a little.



I hear birds chirping from the outside of the window. However, peeking out from the gaps on the curtain, it's not yet dawn.

There's a sign of a human.

That sign came from the top.

Gii, when the door opened, it was Lululie in pajamas.

「Good morning」

「Good morning. So you were awake」

While lightly surprised, Lululie greeted back.

「I'm a guard so I'm up. Aside from that, is your body okay already?」

「Yes, thanks to you I'm completely energized.³ I'll go to work again today」

Lululie's complexion improved greatly, it can be seen that fatigue came out. If it's about condition, I'm quite worse. It's no problem if it's like this.

「I see. It's good that you're energetic. Sorry but let me rest for a bit more. If you're going, wake me up so I can go with you」

「Yes. Did you eat breakfast already?」

「Can I ask of you?」

「Then I'll prepare immediately」

Lululie headed to the kitchen with apron on one of her hand. Immediately after, Ton Ton Ton, a rhythmic sound of kitchen knife and fragrant smell of roast meat drifts.

While waiting half-asleep, my shoulder was shook by Lululie.

「I'm done」

「Ah, thanks. I'll get up」

I removed the blanket and got up. Even though it's morning, my son is in low-spirits because it was oppressed yesterday. This needs to rest too.

‘Uuun’, while stretching, Lululie stares at my face.

「What's wrong?」

「Ah, No, you seem to be tired」

I check my condition while turning my shoulder. There's no hindrance in movement, but my body feels heavy as expected. Matifa had sex with me and polluted me with magical power and made me oversensitive, there's the effect of magical power purification medicine, but my body still feels heavy burden. I'll have no choice but to do various health care for myself today.

「Yeah, I worked till late yesterday, I'm still tired. But, if it's this much, there's no problem」

「Is that so? Please don't overwork yourself too much. You'll get a cold」

「I'll be careful」

Lululie approached after I finished light stretches. Then, she extends her hand on my casual clothes.

Thinking what she will do, she began to tidy my clothing.

「Thanks」

「Don't worry, It's my kind of work after all...」

Lululie smoothened the wrinkles of the clothes like she's used to it. As expected from a pro-maid. He incidentally felt her like a newly married woman. Newly married woman, that sounds nice.

After arranging me beautifully, Lululie sat on the table where she put the breakfast she prepared. I sat on the opposite side and ate Lululie's handmade breakfast.

It's an orthodox menu with bacon and eggs on bread and a salad. It's an ordinary morning scene where you eat normally and speak normally.

But, I wonder why. My mind is being sting over.

「Did it not suit your taste?」

「No way. It's been a while since I had such a meal so I'm impressed」

Since when this is a normal meal? I have no memory of it after coming into this world at least.

At Master's place they only have simple meals and value nutrition, furthermore it's forbidden to talk. When I got out of there I always eat alone, just a bread and it can fill the day. Yesteday I ate lunch that Misha had prepared, she cooked it well and simple, but since she's a slave that's disciplined to be attentive, there wasn't an atmosphere that can be called a fun meal.

「Is the breakfast not enough?」

「No, it's not like that, I mean that there's no one who make meals for me after a long time. It's already been three years where I had no memory of eating like this」

「Three Years?... Though I might not understand even if I hear it, but was it harsh?」

「It was harsh and painful but I can't do anything about it. Well, I don't regret it」

There's no regret. Though I don't regret, it wasn't good either.

Lululie showed a complicated face for a moment, then smiled gently.

「Then, please take it easy while you're here」

「I'll take your offer」

Thus, Lululie, welcomed me. Yesterday I was just a total stranger.

We chatted for a while after that, I walked Lululie to the castle even before the morning rise.

The market is still crowded with people early in the morning and the distance naturally comes near. Lilith and Misha are already on friendly terms, talking about what should they make for dinner today and some silly talk, we had arrived in front of the castle gate before we noticed.

「Good luck on your work」

「Yes, I'll be going」

Then, I waved my hand to see her off in front of the castle gate.

This is somehow nice. This feels like in exchange for my super abilities, I lost my daily life, I return to Lululie's house to take a nap while indulging myself in deep emotion.



The two little children that woke up in the morning run around filled with vigor. After eating breakfast, they brushed teeth together and went to the morning market together.

Usually, it's Lululie that does the shopping, but since Misha is here, the work is assigned to the little kid.

In the end, we're here because Lululie has the food expense, I handed them money secretly so they would buy more than usual. If that

happened, the amount Lululie eats won't increase but Misha is gluttonous.

Meanwhile I slept for the third time. This time it's serious sound sleep. The body with fatigue remaining quickly fell asleep.

When I woke up, the two had returned and finished the household briefly.

I awaken my drowsiness with water then took out the two children to the orphanage. It's the orphanage Seria visited before.

Lilith can't go to school and the person herself doesn't like being in house alone, she usually is entrusted to the orphanage. There she plays as the helpful onee-chan, in addition she seems to study together there.

I decided to leave her to Misha since it's special. The director of the orphanage was a good old woman. When she read Lululie's letter, she accepted Misha pleasantly.

「Misha, I'll leave you to guard Lilith」

「Yeah」

「Lilith, try to teach Misha various things」

「Got it」

That said, I feel that the two won't part their hands easily. This is lonely as it is.



I who become alone headed to the Royal Castle Right away. It's to continue the investigation that wasn't done yesterday.

I invaded the place one by one and there was one big harvest.

That's Radom's motive for being hostile on Misumunto Kingdom.

Radom's childhood friend that became his fiancé was lost when they went to war against Misumunto Kingdom. It seems to be revenge.

That woman is Will Gantts daughter, the head of the family, Felix who lost his daughter has the same purpose.

In order to obstruct the friendship, they planned to kidnap Seria.

It's definitely a criminal act but in the first place the army is Felix's. It would be reflected on the strong measures.

Aside from that, there's not much other harvest. Everyone waits for Felix's report tomorrow. In exchange, I found evidence of corruption, but will this be useful as expected?

Today, the most suspicious move are the maids hurrying. Apparently, they seem to use the space for the audience for Felix's return tomorrow, they're preparing and cleaning the space to accept the audience which are nobles that will come over tomorrow, considering the sudden increase of work, hands can't be seen turning.

Lululie was one of them too. Although she collapsed yesterday, she's tidying up large quantities of laundry alone while putting away her sweat. Even though there's magic, there's no change in hard labor. Though I'm worried that she might collapse again, but I can't help her, I can only watch over her.

Since she will come back tired today, I'll let her relax slowly that time.

When I look over Seria's state, she seems to be studying on the desk. When I closed up to check, it wasn't yesterday's novel but a politics related book. She's doing her best in her own way. Since I can't disturb her when she shows motivation, I didn't call her out.

As usual, lion stands before the door. But, there's fewer magical power leaking from there compared to the day before yesterday. It must be thanks to Matifa's strong barrier. It became easy to do various things.

Because I'm curious about Seria's guard set-up, It seems that at Lion is at daytime and two female knights at night. Lion is no problem but the night time guard set-up makes me uneasy. I don't want to rely too much but I can't do anything but to ask Matifa.

Thinking so, I faced towards Matifa's location.

「You came. I'm glad that you came for me」

Matifa greeted me with her usual tone. She seems to be researching magic in her workshop today. There are some old books and suspicious liquid bottles scattered everywhere. Against the wall are some specimens of creatures I don't even know.

After greetings we cut down to business immediately.

「There are some things I want to ask」

「What? Just say it」

「During night, I want you to defend Seria」

「I don't mind it, but it's not for free」

Matifa attach her elbow to the desk and grinned. I intend to use yesterday's contract.

「I know. If you want to know something then listen. I'll tell you whatever you want on the otherworld」

「Let's see. Then, why don't you teach me your world's magic?」

「I don't mind, but basically there's no magic on my world, Are you fine with that?」

Matifa nodded.

「Just the important information. But, there's a concept about magic right? Even myths and legends are fine. Please let me hear it by all means」

Talking about myth...」

I'm not well informed on myths or legends. I've read those manga and anime targeting general public, but it's not wise to tell her that. I can only tell fairy tales or children's story at most.

「Anything is nice. I want to know you more. Therefore it doesn't need to be a accurate myth. I just want you to tell what you see, hear, how you understand, how you feel. Quick. Anything is fine so let me hear it」

「Well, if you say so—」

Then, I told some famous stories.

Interrupting my poor talk, Matifa says「Okay, then?」she nods while listening enthusiastically. Her figure looks like a child listening intently, naturally, my tone gets passionate. So this fellow can make that face, I thought.

Before soon, the prince rescued the princess and the fun time came to an end.

「Un, that was fun. Your world's people sure have an interesting idea of freedom. After all, it's the result of having no magic? I did hear a story in this world that resembles it, I liked it but other people don't model their enemies.⁴ But the story from your world seems to be overflowing with dreams. ...Yup, I'm satisfied. You should be relieved because I will protect Seria like the prince」

Those are Matifa's impressions. This girl seems to think on her own way. Not with her usual wicked smile, but she smiled innocently like a child.

「I see, if so, then I'm glad. Sorry to interrupt while you're satisfied, but I have another favor to ask」

「What? Since I'm in a good mood I'll hear anything」

「Yeah, I want to make something...」



When I left Matifa's place, the sun already sank. This is probably the only day where Matifa didn't do ero.

Afterwards, I came to meet the two children and the three of us had gone home while joining hands. The two of them happily talked about what they did and the friends they made today.

「And then and then, Mi-chan is amazing! She can do better arithmetic than ! Even the teacher was surprised that she can do two digit multiplication mentally!」

「Master, Misha, amazing?」

「Misha can do anything」

「Ehehe」

Misha's tail goes straight upward then sways happily. It seems Misha is clever. I won't have to worry with this.

The three of us had dinner when we returned, then the two of them entered the bath. Fortunately, water is abundant but neither I, Misha or Lilith can use fire magic. It can't be helped so I worked as the fire watchman.

「How's the temperature?」

「It's just right. Onii-san, thank you」

「I don't like baths」

「Mi-chan should warm up properly」

「Ya」

Inside were the two children giggling. Peeking from the window, I can see two children with small chest. Their growth phase isn't over yet. I wasn't excited because I'm a foolish sage today.

Chapter 35: Lululie found out

When the two children got out of the bath, I came to meet Lululie. This is part of the guard duty.

I waited in front of the castle as it gets dark, then after a while, Lululie came out from the side gate. I waved my hand then she walks to me when she noticed.

「You seem to be tired」

「Yes, urgent jobs pressed in」

I received her baggage that seems to be heavy and we walked along the same way as we did this morning in an opposite direction. The lights were thin so Lululie brought a magic light lantern.

Idly, the illuminated appearance of Lululie is somehow faint, I have a feeling that it will disappear without a warning.

Lululie softly smiles and begins to talk.

「Is Lilith a nuisance?」

「No way. Rather, I'm saved as she takes care of Misha. She's a good little sister」

「That's true. It's my prided hardworking little sister」

Lululie is pleased that Lilith is being praised. She really loves her. She might be hot-tempered towards Lilith, but that shows that they're in good terms.

「But Misha-chan can do anything」

「That girl had some hardships. She became desperate and learned it」

Misha does housework since she was small from the slave house, then she was Matifa's labcat¹ on top of that. It's not a normal life.

I thought about Misha's hardships, Lululie threw a question to confirm it.

「That's why you're spoiling her?」

Did I spoil her?

How I handle Misha isn't something that a slave would understand. I want to spoil Misha because she's cute, but I'd be lying if I said that I didn't feel pity on her hardship up until now. But, that's not the only reason.

The best reason why I spoil Misha is because of Matifa. Now that I'm supported by her, I can't completely trust Misha. Then, I just have to treat Misha to move for my convenience. Therefore, I made her free and made Lilith her friend. But, I shouldn't say that.

「That's not true. She'll have to handle hard work together with me. That's why I want to build mutual trust」

「Is that so? But isn't it alright for a slave even if you don't have mutual trust?」

Since slaves are bound with contract magic, they can't disobey their masters. But, Matifa is the one who applied the magic to Misha.

「Certainly, she's bound by the slave contract magic, but that's not perfect. In case of emergency, I can't match against Misha. That's why I have to look like a good master」

「Fufu, so you pretend that it's like that」

She threw a light laugh. She didn't believe in me.

「Lululie too, aren't you soft hearted on Lilith and Princess Seria? If you worked till you collapsed, no one would be pleased」

「Yes, the princess told me that today. I'll take care」

「Please do. It can't be helped to collapse even if you're not a guard」

Thus, we continued to talk in the town of the night. We meet a drunkard on the roadside occasionally, but they didn't pick a fight in particular.

We reached Lululie's house before long. We passed under the door together while greeting "We're home", but the children shows no reaction.

I thought it was strange, but Lilith was sleeping on the sofa. She clings on Misha that she's troubled because if she moves she'll come off.

「Welcome back Master」

「I'm back. You seem to be doing well 」

「Un, Lilith-chi is a friend」

「I see. Then, carry her to the bed」

「She doesn't separate」

Which is better, Matifa or Lilith? Does Misha excrete a pheromone to be liked by girls? If you have, then please give it to me too.

Lululie who can't stand it any longer shakes Lilith.

「Geez, Lilith... Misha-chan, sorry. Hey, Lilith. Sleep on your own room」

「N~.....Mi-chan is warm...」

「Geez...」

However, Lilith didn't wake up. She stayed late yesterday after all. Misha's eyes seeks for help.

「It can't be helped」

If this continues, Lilith will catch a cold, I carried the two of them on the room as they seek to be wrapped in blanket.

「I'll leave this to you Misha」

「Master is mean」

「You have superhuman strength so you can do anything」

「Lilith-chi will wake up」

「Then give it up」

「Muuu~」

I ignored Misha's hateful voice and left the room immediately. Misha would manage.

I warm the bath and let Lululie enter ahead afterwards.

While I do fire watch again, a beautiful sound can be heard from the bathroom. She's probably humming, it doesn't seem to be clear, I thought. 2 Is this a tune passed to the elves? It feels like an ethnic music from somewhere which transmits soothing effect on your mind when heard. I unconsciously lost in thought.

When Lululie got up, I borrowed the bath to wash of my sweat. A plant was planted here so a natural fragrance drifted on the bathroom. I soaked in the hot water that feels like a hot spring and my fatigue came off.

When I got up from the bath, Lululie is on the sofa.

「How was the bath?」

「Yeah, it was a nice hot water. Sorry to borrow your bath」

「No, it's fine. Also, I haven't given thanks when you helped Lilith either」

Saying that, Lululie turned to my back and began to massage my shoulder.

「Ah~It feels good」

「It's my thanks from yesterday」

Lululie's delicate hand loosen the shoulder muscle. The gentle hand heals the body.

It feels like it's a service from the hot spring hotel. Furthermore, it's a service of a beautiful Elf sister.

If Seria isn't here, I would propose to her right now.

「Your body is forged wonderfully. I can't see that much, but your muscles are packed」

「It's because I lose if I don't train. Even with this training, I'm still no match against a knight with magical power. Well, I can still do it」

「...Just a bit, can you let me hear your story?」

Hesitating, Lululie asked.

After Matifa, now Lululie?

「I don't mind but, I'm not as respectable of a human as you think」

「Yes, I know. You're an otherworlder aren't you?」

「...Eh?」

Why does Lululie know?

Am I that famous?

Or did Seria expose me?

「Ah, sorry for surprising you. I've heard the story about the otherworlder from the princess. Since the name and features match, I thought that it was you」

「Wait a moment. When did you hear that story?」

「Well, three years and over and over again. She says that she always want to meet him but she can't. But, I didn't hear it recently」

Whenever Seria goes to Master's place does she leak it out to Lululie? Then, she doesn't know I raped her. That was dangerous.

「I see. If you noticed, then it can't be helped. That's right, I'm an otherworlder. But that's a secret」

「Yes, I know that. The princess spoke to no one but me」

「Thanks. I don't want to have some eyes set on me」

Like Matifa, or Matifa, or Matifa.

「Yes, therefore, can you talk some story where you can actually tell?」

「Well then」

Most of them are fabricated lies.

Then, Lululie began a barrage of questions.

「Then, where was Ren-san's birthplace?」

「It's a country named Japan. It's a country with no magic but technologically advanced」

「What do you do there?」

「I was a student」

「Student? How old are you?」

「19」

「You're one year younger than me. Since you're mature, I thought that you're older」

So Lululie is 20 years old? Her appearance looks like a high school student, it's probably because she's an elf.

「Don't overwork yourself. When you make light of it, something bad might happen」

「Your constitution is dangerous isn't it? But, aren't you in marriageable age since you're 19 years old? Do you have a girlfriend?」

「Nope」

「But do you have someone you like?」

「If it's that, then there's one」

There's a lot. Seria, Lululie, Lilith, Add Matifa and Misha too. As for Cathy?...If anything, it's like an older sister and a partner. I'm really a man without principles.

「Fufu, you didn't hide」

「I'll hide the name」

「Yes, I understand」

Kusukusu, I heard Lululie giggling. Now then, should I make fun of her?

「What about Lululie? I don't know the custom of elves, but in the capital you're at marriageable age already」

「Elves marriageable age is a bit higher. It's around 25~100. Though there are those who marries as early as 20, but it seems impossible for me and Lilith for the time being」

I see. In short, Lululie intends to marry if she can.

「But, there're some nice men in the castle right? If you catch won't you

live easily?」

「The castle doesn't recognize demi-humans. Since the princess employed me firsthand, The king had recognized it」

「Ahh, this country uses human supremacy principle after all」

Lululie might've been harassed too. There are those who aren't but you can't trust their sympathy.

「But, you don't mind it right?」

「That doesn't matter for me. Even if it's a human, I hate who I hate, then when it comes to demi-human, I like who I like. I look and decide on the other party thoroughly」

What's important is that the other party is a beauty. If it's a beauty, then I will forgive, if not I won't. My criteria is 50% Face, 20% Body, and 30% Character³

「We're grateful from just that. Especially since Lilith has that constitution, we're not wanted even on our elf hometown. If the princess didn't pick me up that time, I wonder what would happen...」

Lululie's hand stopped suddenly. When I turned back in worry, Lululie's eyes gone distant. She's probably seeing the time she met Seria.

「Lululie, let's switch. I'll listen to your story this time」

This time, I let Lululie sit down on the sofa and rub her shoulders.

「N, okay then. What do you want to hear?」

「If you don't mind, please continue your story. Why did you get out of the elf village? Furthermore only with your little sister」

「No, we were with our parents first. However, we were attacked by demons and they died... When I was at loss, that's when I met the princess and I became her maid. That's why I don't raise my head on the princess. I came to the capital for the medicine and money. That's because Lilith's treatment cost a lot of money」

Lululie talks about her harsh past.

Because it's impossible to live in the elf village if you can't use spirit magic, her family had gone to the capital five years ago. But, both her parents are elves and didn't have good work with income, they did dangerous work outside the wall.

The father died first. The father himself is an adventurer that hunted demons with the bow on his arm. But, one day he was the one hunted instead and died. A story commonly heard.

Next was her mother. The mother was helping farming outside the wall, but unfortunately, it seems that the field was attacked by a group of demons of poisonous insect. All the workers were destroyed. Lululie's mother is no exception.

Losing both parents, Lululie and Lilith were taken to the orphanage. But, unable to buy Lilith's medicine, Lilith collapsed in fever. Seria appeared there.

Seria wanted some helper, Lululie wanted to work. Seria consulted the King and Lululie was taken to the castle as Seria's maid. Then, she purchased Lilith's medicine using the advance payment, the two were saved.

「I've been with the princess since then. Princess is really a kind-hearted person」

How Lululie thinks of seria was transmitted from her tone. My heart ached a little.⁴

「Hey, whay I'm telling such things」

「You must be tired. When you're tired your complains come out. Didn't you want someone to hear it?」

「That might be. Somehow, I feel something similar from you...」

That said, Lululie fell silent. Are Lululie and I alike? Both of us were helped by Seria but what we did after has heaven and earth difference. Lululie supported her, I violated her due to my lust. I can hardly say we're the same. The strange air flows between two people.

Unable to endure the mood, I pushed down Lululie.

「Uhm, what are you」

「Lululie, I'll massage your whole body today」

「Eh?」

「Hey, lie down」

I lied down Lululie on the sofa forcibly, then applied pressure on her back.

「How's it? does it hurt?」

「N...It's okay. I'm sorry, I should be the one doing it」

「Don't mind it. I do it because I want to」

I push her whole back with my palm then firmly massage her waist. When it was done, her neck, shoulder, hand. Lululie relaxes her whole body and accepts it.

「Fuu...It feels good」

「Next would be your lower body. If you don't want it, just say it」

Continuing I did a top down order from her her ass, thighs, calf, to the sole of her foot. If it's the usual, I would mix it with my wicket heart, but today I'm different. Completely innocent, I only thought of earnestly healing Lululie's fatigue. When it ended, Lululie closes her eyes pleasantly.

「Lululie, wake up. If you want to sleep, sleep on your own room」

「N...u...」

I shook her shoulder but there's no sign of her waking up at all. The sister are very much alike in this part. What's up with that?

It's easy to wake up⁵, I felt a bit sorry to see her seemingly happy sleeping face. It can't be helped so I carried her to the bed. I feel sorry for the sleeping Lululie but don't complain.

「Lululie, if you won't wake up, I'll carry you to the bed. You hear?」

「Un...」

As expected, Lululie didn't react.⁶

I held Lululie's thighs and princess carried her. I carried her like this that time. I remembered her small breast that time but my sex drive isn't springing. How did I end up like this.

Then, when I began to walk, Lululie's body suddenly stiffened up.

Shit. She woke up.

「Lululie, you awake? If you want to sleep, then go to your room」

「N...」

When I thought that Lululie opened her eyes, it was closed immediately again. But, it's clear that her body has been strained when she woke up.

Lululie feigned sleep. But, for what purpose?

Isn't that obvious? It's to accept me. She feels that I have affinity with her that she doesn't mind being carried like a princess.

My plan to win over the elf sisters was better than I expected.

「Lululie, I'll carry you to your room. If you're going to sleep, then sleep there」

「N...」

As expected Lululie doesn't get up. No, she's awake but feigning sleep. I carried Lululie's thin body to the bed.

Then, when I entered Lululie's room, I was shocked by the spectacle.

The spirit world was there.

Ivy is crawling on the circumference on the lattice set up on the wall, strange flowers blooming here and there. Disgusting potted plants, indescribable plants were growing, I hesitated to approach.

Did I come to a tropical jungle?

There's a fragrance drifting on the room I can't name. It doesn't stink. It doesn't stink but the fragrance confuses my mind.

Is this possibly Lululie's hobby?

I decided not to mind too much for the time being and lay down Lululie on the bed. I put the blanket on her and escaped the room quickly.

Chapter 36: Morning Recovery

Next morning, Lululie woke up before dawn just like yesterday. You might think that yesterday was repeated but, there's one thing different.

After a full day rest, my son has finally revived.

My son who's rejoicing on the revival stretches a tent. Lululie who just woke up had her line of sight naturally drawn there.

Lululie gulps her saliva. It's a physiological phenomenon, I said it as an excuse, she ran to the kitchen after greeting me. Sad.

When my son calms down, it would be the same as yesterday. The two of us walked to the town in the morning and I saw her off on the castle's front gate.

Then, when I returned to Lululie's house, an incident¹ occurred 「Onii-san, it's terrible, terrible! Mi-chan wet on the bed!」

「Master, I'm sorry」

When I thought the two children were noisy getting up, those were the first words I heard. Misha was unable to separate from Lilith and go to the toilet last night, it seems she had leaked out this morning. Both of them had their pajamas wet 「For now, go to the bathroom. I'll bring you hot water」

「Yees, we'll wash first okay」

「Lilith-chi, I'm sorry」

Misha who had her cat ears and tail down had been taken by Lilith to the bathroom.

I set fire on the kitchen and heated water by putting the pot on the flame. When it got warm enough, I went to the two people waiting.

The door of the bathroom was open. When I peeped secretly, a dreamlike paradise spread from there The two girls in their birthday suit plays with bubbles. Holding bubbles on both their hands, they spread it on each other's body. The important place is hidden behind the bubbles,

but their tender ass is completely exposed.

Especially Lilith. I wasn't interested yesterday but I can easily understand that she's a child birthing type. Loli's pure ass is subarashii2!

It seems the bubble is coming out from the soap stuck on the water tub. Laundry were scattered all over the place.

But are they tired of washing? They seem to be crazy on the bubble play.

Misha who had bubble on the tip of her nose takes a stance by scooping the bubble out of the tub.

「Eii!」

「Kyaa!」

She wave her hand with a shout then bubble flew to Lilith following the inertia. The bubble jumped into Lilith's arm, flat chest and her stomach.

But, Lilith didn't lose.

「Comeback!」

「myaa!」

Lilith threw the bubble this time. Misha hit it with her tail. However, the bubble still hit her, Misha's eyes were hit directly. Unable to endure, Misha turned her head.

「Wawa, Mi-chan, are you okay?」

「...Eiii」

「Wa-Kyaa!」

Lilith was worried so she approached, Misha replied with a bubble. Both hands has bubbles and are forced to Lilith's washboard directly.

「Ahahaha, it tickles!」

Lilith twists her body trying to escape Misha's offense, but Misha moves skillfully so she doesn't miss. The flat chest were rubbed by both hands, her areola is stimulated by the finger drawing a circle.

「ahahahaha! Mi-chan, wait, wait! I said it tickles」

Lilith tries to stop her but Misha doesn't comply. As expected from someone who was educated by Matifa. She doesn't hesitate to do naughty things at all. The way she use her hands gradually gets intense.

However, should I only watch? No, it's not good.

My son finally revived. I'm not a man if I hesitate here.

I took out the item that I got yesterday from my pouch.

It's a long slender cloth with stripe pattern having a pointed shape. That's right, it's a perverted gentleman purveyor item, a necktie.

I manage to persuade Matifa yesterday, it's a secret item that I got in exchange for the information of my invisibility. It's name is transparent necktie. It's loaded with Matifa's original invisibility magic.

However this magic is different from my ability. In other words, this magic overcame my biggest problem in my invisibility which is 『Unable to touch others』

This also has some faults. Neither smell nor sound is hidden, it also don't give effect on the clothes you're wearing. However, Matifa's cursed panties are exception. Therefore, if I want to be an invisible man, I have no choice but to wear a tie.

When I looked at Seria's room, Matifa's clothes disappeared, those had some various hard control, but it was impossible to achieve it by an improvised item.

But, that's fine, rather, that's what I want.

I put on the invisible tie and undressed. The necktie hides my groin and also my whole body. What a reassuring necktie.

The preparations are complete with this. Let's begin the mission immediately.

I invade the bathroom stealthily tiptoeing.

Piku. Misha's ears caught me. Kun Kun, her nose moved. As expected,

even if I'm not seen, it's impossible to deceive the sharp senses of a beast-man.

But I have my own invisibility ability too. If I used that, even Misha won't find me.

I turned on my own ability and sneaked around Misha's back. If I used it for just 10 seconds, the recoil isn't that much, one minute and I would be able to use it again.

Misha still fiddles Lilith's body. She's tickling her sides right now. I reached out to Misha's defenseless breasts.

「Myaa!??」

I checked the Funi Funi feeling. Misha is really a child. There's not even a swell, a chipai. Still, it has some soft feeling on it, her future looks promising.

「Mi-chan, what's wrong?」

Seeing Misha raising a sudden voice, Lilith wondered and tilted her head.

「Just now, something touched. It's probably master」

Tsk, this one exposed me quickly. But, Lilith looked around her surroundings and didn't see me anywhere.

「Onii-san? He's not here?」

「Uuun, He's hiding」

「Where?」

「I don't know」

fufufufufu. Isn't that obvious? No one can find me if I hid Seriously. That would be the same even for Misha.

Meanwhile, I sneaked around Lilith's back. The next washboard target is this one. I reached out my hand the same way.

「Hyawa!」

The feeling of her rib is transmitted to my hand. ...Hold out a bit more.

「No, What's this? Scary!」

Lilith holds my hand from above. There's something she can't see.
Lilith feels fear.

Misha reached her hand to protect Lilith who's afraid. I withdrawn my hand before that, then I used my invisibility ability again.

「!, He escaped」

Misha looks mortified. Fufufu, You won't catch me.

Now then, my next target is the ass. Lilith's pure ass should be touched by my hand.

On contrary to her chest, her ass is big and plump. Under the constricted part, her wide backbone draws a gentle curve on her welling ass meat, it has a round shape that never drops. It would be very worth seeing her dance in carnival clothes.

I caught her ass without mercy.

「Hyawa! This time it's my bottom!?!」

There's nothing to criticize on the touch feeling. Her supple skin sticks to my hand, the elastic ass meat of hers pushes back the finger by a moderate sexual feeling.

Cathy's ass is the best so far, but this girl has a talent beyond that. Lilith, be relieved. You have a good thing even you have no chest.

「No! Mi-chan, help me!」

「Leave it to me!」

Getting sexually harassed by an invisible man seems scary, Lilith clings to Misha. Misha plunges straight to me. As expected of a remodeled beast man. She seems to be able to grasp my location even she can't see my body.

「Master, captured—Nya!?!」

However, she can't see my movements. The arm that tries to catch me

is twisted and I caught her instead. Misha, you were defeated by me due to the same failure.

I must discipline the rebellious Misha. I hold her down on the floor and stroke her ass.

「Muaaaa! Master, you can't! Lilith-chi is here」

「!, Mi-chan, is that really onii-san? It's not a ghost?」

Lilith asks Misha anxiously.

「Un, there's no doubt. This scent is Master. Also, the only one who can do this is Master」

「Somehow, that's an amazing reason. But, I see, It was onii-san」

When Misha asserted, Lilith leaked a sigh of relief. Meanwhile, I keep stroking Misha's ass.

Misha also has a round cute ass like Lilith. This one has a elastic muscle, and erotic flexibility. When I placed my penis, it feels good.

「Mu~ Master is lewd! Hentai! Savage!!」

Misha's booing feels good.

My son gets even more energetic as I rub it, Lilith asked Misha.

「M-Mi-chan? What's going on?」

「In my ass—nya! Myaaaaa」

Since Misha was about to say something unnecessary, I grasped her weak point, the tail to shut her up. Misha. You already lost to me. Give it up.

「U~ Master, that's unfair」

I stroke Misha's tail, she lost strength in a blink of an eye. She can't suppress it any longer.

When I checked her pussy, it was starting to get wet as expected. I poke my finger and and Jubo Jubo stir inside her vagina. Since my finger is transparent, her insides are completely exposed. The pink folds of her

vagina squirm, I can see the appearance of her love bubbly love nectar well.

When I see it, I felt like I want to put it in. But, Lilith is here. I won't hesitate if I wasn't found out, but Misha exposed me.

Sexual harassment is just as bad as the actual act, but when I looked at Lilith's state, she's looking at Misha anxiously.

「M-Mi-chan? Are you okay?」

「Myaaaa... I'm okay, I feel good...」

「You're not okay at all?」

「Lilith-chi run away. Master is dangerous today」

「I can't possibly run away Mi-chan!」

What a beautiful friendship. Did you become like this just after a few days. That's what I thought but it seems it's not that much.

「Also, if it's onii-san...I don't mind being attacked」

Lilith puts her fingertips together while fidgeting. It's lewd pink as expected. Are you okay with me attacking you?

However, I'm hesitating.

I can attack anytime without reserve, or rather, I already attacked Misha but, handling Lilith is delicate.

The problem would be my promise to Seria and the guard contract with Lululie. My promise with Seria is to not attack other women including Lululie. Of course, Lilith is included in the subject. But, for Lilith, it can be said as a romantic relationship as she fell in love to the one who saved her in crisis. If she consent, then Seria can't do anything.

My guard contract is to protect Lilith's body. It's absurd for the guard to be the attacker. If there's such a person, he should die right now.³

However, the guarded wishes for it. I intend to respect the employer's intention to the maximum.

Therefore, I approved by a unanimous vote. Itadakimasu.

「It's a secret to Lululie」

「Wa, it's really onii-san's voice! Okay, it's a secret to Onee-chan!」

Lilith gladly answered. It can't be helped since she's happy.

「Lilith-chi, sorry. I couldn't protect...」

Misha seems to be dissatisfied. Lilith seems to be much more important than her master. I have to discipline her.

「Lilith, wait for a bit. I'll show Misha as an example」

「Okay, but please don't cover it up if she doesn't like it」

「Don't worry. This one loves naughty things」

「Is that so?」

「Mu, I don't deny it」

「She didn't...」

If that's decided, then let's begin quickly.

I hold up Misha from the back.

「Wa, Mi-chan floated!?!」

「Nyaa, it feels new」

Misha seems happy as she doesn't see the one holding her. I carried Misha on the mirror just like that.

I sit on the chair and adjusted the unseen penis using intuition. Then, without a notice, I dropped Misha.

「Nyaaaaaaa! Suddenly!?!」

Misha is shocked as she didn't see the sudden impact, the hair of her tail stands out and her thin foot extends erectly.

Though it expanded from the last time, Misha's hole is narrow as expected. Still, using Misha's weight, it's forced to enter deeper.

「Wa! No way, Mi-chan's place is spreading!?!」

Lilith was agitated with the sudden event. She should be. Thinking that

Misha was suddenly raised from the surface, then something unseen penetrated her pussy. Just what kind of person wouldn't be surprised on it? No, there's something wrong with my head.

I'll think about it later, for now I'll enjoy Misha's hole.

I turn my hand on Misha's knee and shake her up and down. Misha's pussy is excreting love nectar, my penis is wet and the shape surfaced.

Misha reflected on the mirror looks shameful. A long stride opens and discharge love nectar while panting alone in midair. If I adjust the angle a little, the inside is completely exposed.

Her pink vaginal walls shine as it shut and open, that spectacle was absolutely indecent. I was able to confirm the uterus that's resisting inside Misha. It shuts hard as if trying to refuse the invasion of the transparent penis stubbornly. I was abnormally excited that I thought I might throw semen right now.

「Myaaa! Mashter, wait! Misha's inside is seen, myaaa!」

「Yeah, it's a beautiful pussy that's not rough at all. Well done」

「Umyaaaa. Masthter, hentai!」

「That's a compliment」

I hit her insides while Misha exchange some foolish impression with me, Lilith spoke from the back.

「Mi-chan, are you okay?」

「Mya, mya, I-I'm okay. But this is embarrassing. Don't look」

「Waa, Mi-chan is showing a dirty face...」

「Un, my crotch is attack rapidly, it fels good, myaaa...」

Lilith seeing Misha feeling pleasant, she feels relief. She didn't see it stop in particular.

Misha feels good too. She relaxed her body and faced backwards, I made my tongue crawl on her neck. As expected, even if you can't see it, you can approximate.

Seeing that, Lilith extends her hand to me.

「Wawa, there's really something! This is onii-san?」

「Yeah, that's my back」

「Eeh, I can't really see anything. How do you do this?」

「That's a secret」

「Fuun」

Lilith repeatedly pressed and touched my body to ascertain. If seen in the mirror, it's like she's pantomiming, but I'm there. It's a strange scene.

「Misha, how does it feel to have an invisible partner?」

「Myaa! It's a bit scary, but I can smell master so I'm fine」

「It must be nice, Mi-chan. I know how you feel」

Lilith looks at Misha being licked and tells that she's jealous.

Certainly, Misha's adaptability is amazingly good. There should be a considerable amount of courage to believe in an invisible partner. Misha is a cute slave as expected being able to accept it easily.

I can't help but to throw out on that cute pussy.

「Misha, shooting it out. Look firmly」

「Myaaa, okay. Mashter, let it out!」

Pan Pan, the sound of two meat banging each other. The breathing of the Misha in midair becomes rougher.

Seeing that, Lilith muttered.

「W-what's happening?」

It seems that the spectacle is too quick for Lilith. Well, if she understood it correctly, she won't be able to calm down.

That's fine as it is, I concentrated to Misha. Zubo Zubo, love nectar and white bubble is flowing from her pussy. Seeing the deepest part, it can be seen that her folds are wriggling.

Even if it's not seen, my penis is penetrating Misha and the feeling goes tight.

Her uterus loosen as I thrust persistently. My invisible glans open the hole. That moment, my excitement reached the climax.

「Cumming!!」

「Myaaaaaaaaaaaaaa!!」

Dopyu! Byururururu!! Semen is shot inside Misha. The white semen shot out accumulated inside her vagina, it's being poured inside her womb.

Misha's small womb is filled with syrupy semen.

I moved my penis for the last time and applied it on her small vagina.

「Myaa! Mashter's is entering...」

Misha looked at the spectacles with her body twitching as she's exhausted.

Chapter 37: Lilith's first time

When I pulled out my penis, semen that was released inside Misha spilled. Misha scooped it with her finger and put it in her mouth.

Seeing that scene, Lilith's eyes widened.

「Mi-chan, what are you licking!？」

「N, Master's sperm」

「Isn't that dirty?」

「It's delicious. Lilith-chi, want some?」

Of all things, Misha recommended semen to Lilith. This person's brain is really flying. Just what kind of special education Matifa gave her?

「No, after all that's...」

「If you drink this, your breast grows big」

「Is that true!？」

That's definitely a lie. But, Misha calmly lies.

「Really, it's true. With this, Lilith-chi would be bayin bayin, boing boing. It's certain」

「Bayin bayin and boing boing...」

Lilith naturally touched her small breasts. Only the feeling of her ribs and her nipples can be felt there. She originally has no fat.

Suka Suka, Lilith grasps empty space.

「Got it! Mi-chan I'll do my best!」

「Un, Lilith-chi, do your best」

The pure Lilith was deceived.

Misha made a V-sign on where Lilith can't see. She's toying with her friend.

「But, I'm a bit afraid to lick it...」

「It's okay. Women have guts」

Misha scooped semen and thrust it at Lilith. Lilith stepped back.

Should I help Lilith soon?

「You guys, don't forget about me」

I removed the necktie and appeared in front of them. The two's glance goes to my crotch.

「O-O-O-Onii-san, that...」

「N, Master's penis」

「Mi-chan, that kind of thing entered you!?!」

「Un, it feels good」

After saying it, Misha cling to my son and sucked it. The semen that remained in the urethra is sucked up completely.

「M-Mi-chan!?!」

「Lilith-chi, want to try?!」

「I can't!」

Lilith rejected with teary eyes. It seems that the stimulation was too strong.

Well, it should be as it's her first time. Misha is the strange one.

But, I have to show that she doesn't need to be afraid. I have to show that Lilith should be relieved.

「Misha, I'm fine so make love with Lilith」

「Got it」

After licking most of the semen off, she turned towards Lilith. Then she hugged Lilith from behind while holding her chest. The small hand strokes Lilith's small chest, the small nipple is being flicked.

「Wahya! Mi-chan, what are you doing?!」

「I'm making Lilith-chi feel good. Don't worry, leave it to me」

「Wawa! O-Onii-san don't look...」

Lilith feels embarrassed when she sees me. She's resisting desperately by hiding her completely exposed skin up until now.

I can't just leave it all to Misha so I joined in.

「Lilith, close your eyes」

「Eh, Ah...Un」

When I brought my face close, Lilith closed her eyes in embarrassment. A well proportioned face approaches before one's eyes. Lilith lightly pushes out her thing pigmented lips, her body posture waits for a kiss.

I quietly pushed my lip there. A soft kiss without putting my tongue in. But, it was enough for the child Lilith. Her face became bright red then steam rose from her head.

「Is that your first kiss?」

「U, Un. My heart is beating so fast...」

It seems that kiss has a higher rank than naughty things for Lilith.¹

I kissed her several times just like that.

「Lilith, Do you know what to do? I'm gonna touch you」

「U, Un」

I made my hand crawl on Lilith's skin. It's different from Misha that's completely a child, it's a body of a girl that's in the middle of growing up from a child to an adult. The smooth skin is slippery as it was coated with bubbles. Since this soap is made of magical materials that are gentle with skin, there's no need to worry about rough skin. Stroking the chest from the side of her shoulder.

Lilith's chest is a magnificent no tits. It's to the extent that her stomach can't be identified.

While supporting Lilith from the back, Misha asked on her ear.

「Lilith-chi does it feel good?」

「Un. When Onii-chan touches me it somehow making me shiver」

Lilith looks intoxicated by the feeling of touch.

When I lowered my stroking hand, Lilith opened her mouth.

「Onii-san, I have a request」

「What's wrong?」

「You see, I want you to rub my breast. I heard that it becomes big if it's rubbed by your beloved」

I remembered her quarrel with Lilith the day before yesterday. Surely I had thought that it was just a lie told momentarily, it seems that it's different.

「Wasn't that a lie?」

「Un. It wasn't really from Seria-sama but from the uncle on the pharmacy.² Since there's no medicine to make your breast bigger, I had him teach me」

「Okay, next time I see him I'll kick his ass」

Capo's foolish face floats in my mind. He just told a deliberate lie.

But I guess it's not necessary to destroy a child's dream. Maybe it might have a placebo effect and get really big.

Thus, I rub Lilith's chest due to her quest. No, is it better to say pushed? I stimulate her mammary gland that should be there gently with my finger 「N, Fu...it's somewhat ticklish」

Lilith feels ticklish and frowned. It seems necessary to develop it tightly from feeling her chest.

As I gently rub her thin pink areola with my finger, I kissed Lilith once again.

「N...Chu...」

Lilith's body stiffened from tension. But it seems that she's sensitive at the same time, her nipples get stiff little by little. I kissed Lilith again and again, her body was showered with kisses.

「Ahm nuu...」

Lilith's body squirm in pleasure. I kissed her nipple kindly successively. Just with sucking, her nipples are already pointed hard.

It seems Lilith loves kisses. When I sucked her nipples left and right alternately, it became completely erect.

「Misha wants to kiss too」

「N,...Chu...Churu...」

Misha is really merciless. Turning Lilith's face around and forcibly stealing her lips. Lilith seems to receive it pleasantly, but her reaction changed when Misha put her tongue in.

「N—!? N—Nn—!!」

Lilith resisted in surprise, but it's impossible for Lilith to get away from Misha. Us who have no magical power is no match to the Misha whos physical strength received body reinforcement Misha thoroughly enjoyed Lilith's mouth, the mouth was separated after she was satisfied with the exchange of saliva.

「Puha, Mi-chan, just what was that!？」

「N, an adult kiss」

「Mi-chan is an adult!？」

Reacting on the word Adult, Lilith's glance was sent to me. It seems she wants me to do it.

Just as she demanded, I also kissed Lilith with my tongue penetrating her. I poured saliva and licked the backside of her teeth. Then, when I stick my tongue, Lilith also extends her tongue and entwine it. I receive Lilith's tongue and intersect deeply. Soon enough, her breathing turned rough so we separate our mouths.

Then, Lilith puts her hand on my back and she kissed by herself this time.

「N...Chupa...Churu...Chu...」

Lilith's twines her tongue aggressively with her face enchanted. The sweet saliva is poured and my saliva is being stolen. Until Lilith is satisfied of doing the way she wants it.

「Lilith, how was a kiss of an adult?」

「Un, it felt really good. Am I an adult now with this?」

「You'll be an adult if this place is done」

Saying that, I rubbed Lilith's belly gently. If I opened this up, Lilith will splendidly become an adult.

Then, Lilith looked up asking.

「Onii-san, can you make me an adult?」

A too cunning behavior. Lilith knows the creature called man even though she's just a child.

Surely this person survived just by using this facial expression. Then, she manipulated me too.

「Leave it to me. But, you have to loosen first」

「Un, please」

I spread Lilith's legs and her hidden place is revealed. Her mound of venus has a beautiful vertical line. I made my finger crawl there, then a soft feeling is returned. After gently patting it several times, I opened the crack to check inside.

A beautiful pink labia and a swelling clitoris. In contrast to her chest, this one is very womanly.

「Hawawa, Onii-san is looking」

It seems that she's embarrassed being seen. Lilith tries to close her legs.

However, Misha didn't permit

「Lilith-chi, you can't」

「M-Mi-chan!？」

Misha moves her hand from Lilith's back to her knee, an M posture is

made forcibly. Lilith's soft hip joint is opened splendidly.

「Yada~ Wait, Mi-chan. This is embarrassing」

「It's fine. Master is pleased」

When Misha said that, Lilith gently asks my expression. I answered Lilith with a kiss instead of words.

「N...chu...chupa...」

While I kiss Lilith, I caress her genitals. I opened up her flirty meat and rubbed inside the labia carefully. Lilith's pussy is soft. When I rubbed harder, my finger is buried and was sucked in by the entrance.

「N...Nu...Nah!」

Lilith raised her voice as she was unable to bear it. However, her vagina is seeking my finger as it swallows it deeper. Not resisting the movement, it's been taken to the base suddenly.

Lilith's vagina wraps up my finger gently. Despite my finger feeling the pleasure, I pulled out the finger slowly.

However, Lilith raised a voice in objection.

「W-wait. Don't pull it out」

「What's wrong?」

「I want to feel more of Onii-san's finger. That's why, don't take it out」

Lilith looks uneasy.

「Don't worry. I won't pull it out」

I slip in my finger as Lilith's request. Then I bend my finger inside and gently massage her vaginal wall.

「Wawa, Onii-san's finger, inside me, it's moving」

「Lilith-chi, how does it feel?」

「N, it's rugged, it feels really good. But, I want more...」

「Then, Master」

「Roger」

I added another finger and turn it around inside Lilith's vagina. There's still a room to spare inside Lilith even with two. The flexible folds and the vaginal wall tightens well as it changes form to the finger's shape and doesn't take it away. It's even swallowed further inside.

The vagina wishing it greedily, surely she feels good from the insertion. But, one doesn't satisfy her, Lilith doesn't want the finger to be pulled out.

But, in the end I began the finishing touch.

「Onii-san, what are you doing?」

「I'm going to do what Lilith likes」

I brought my face close to Lilith's open pussy.

「Y-You can't do that place! Onii-san, wait!」

「I won't wait」

Pukkuri, I tasted her swelling clitoris. Bikun, Lilith's body jumped.

「Hyawa, Onii-san, that's like an electric shock!」

Kissing it kindly several times, hanging saliva and kissing it, then tasting it from the skin on the top.

The love nectar gradually overflows from the inside. I licked it, it had a faint sweet taste.

Her vagina shrinks and my finger is tightened up gently.

「Awawa, what's this! Onii-san is sucking my pussy!」

「Lilith-chi, you're suspending your waist. Does Master's mouth feel good?」

「Unn! When he sucks it, when he licks it, it feels really good! Hyawa! something amazing is!」

「Lilith-chi is cumming?」

「Unn, Cumming. I'm about to cum!」

Misha hugs Lilith's back as her waist trembles. Then, both of her

nipples were pulled mercilessly.

「Hyawaaa! Mi-chan, you can't! Noooooooooo!」

「It's to make Lilith-chi's breast big」

Lilith's body is making big convulsions. I also sucked her clitoris at the same time.

「Hawaaaaaaaaa!」

Lilith raised her waist violently and reached climax. My finger is swallowed up further and her vagina wind violently.

I pulled out my finger and lips from it then I kissed Lilith once again.

「N...Chupa...Juru...Rero...Churu...」

The vacant eyed Lilith extends her tongue as if seeking me. Powa powa3, her consciousness seems to be blown away.

When I looked at her, Misha seems to be interested with Lilith and began to touch her own pussy. In the end I don't know what she retaliated but Lilith's genitals were pinched.

「Hyowaaaaaaaaa!」

Lilith wakes in an instant, Misha pretends ignorance while not removing her hand. This girl is burning in jealousy.

Chapter 38: Lilith and Misha 3P

Coming to her senses, Lilith shook her head. Then, she met my eyes.

「How was your first cum?」

「Ah, err, it's somehow fluffy, it felt really good」

It seems that Lilith remembers the feeling well. Then, her eyes looks like she wants more.

「Master, hurry up and make Lilith-chi an adult. Then Misha's next」

Misha raised her impatient voice. I seem to have made her wait when I played with Lilith. This person is just horny.

「I know. Lilith, are you okay?」

「Un, Please, Onii-san. Please make me an adult」

「Leave it to me」

Lilith opened her own pussy with her fingers and begged., Pink folds on the side, the nectar pot is dripping saliva from it's open mouth.

I quietly held my penis there.

「Hauu! Wawa, Onii-san's, entering!」

My penis is pushing through the soft meat, it's pushing in deeper. When I broke the small resistance of her hymen, it was naturally buried.

Lilith's vagina gently wrap up the penis, it's being sucked deeper inside.

It was swallowed up to the base just like that, the point bumped against the mouth of her womb. Her vagina shuts hard and tightens the whole penis.

Lilith's pussy is a deep gentle pussy. My thing is wrapped in a pleasant sensation.

「Lilith, did it hurt?」

「Eh, Un, it doesn't hurt that much, I guess ...Hey, Onii-san, did I become an adult?」

Lilith asked anxiously. Don't worry Lilith, you became an adult. The evidence is the small amount of blood flowing out from the part where we're connected. That's why, I answered to reassure her.

「Yeah, you're already a splendid lady」

「I see, I became an adult... Hiku」

Then, Lilith starts to shed tears as she was overcome with emotion.

「Lilith, what's wrong?」

「You see, I was anxious that I won't be an adult before I died because of my constitution. That's why I'm glad that I became an adult」

Her constitution? It's probably her magic deficiency disease. Children without any magical power die early with just a slight sickness. That's why existence such as me and Lilith are always having fear of death.

Then, Lilith began to tell me her feelings. Misha and I silently listened to her story.

「Everyone thinks of me as pitiful. Especially onee-chan. I hold everything by myself, I don't take anything. I'm not good at anything, I'm always ill, I thought that I would just die as I'm a nuisance to everyone」

Lilith felt helpless from her powerlessness.

That's true. Lilith right now is similar to me when I just came to this world.

I have no power, the weakest existence that can't do anything but to depend on other person for living. I have my superabilities, but Lilith doesn't. That's why she's weak even now, if not for Lululie and Capo and for the granny director on the orphanage, she might be unable to live.

「But you see, when I met Onii-san, I thought that I could do something too. Onii-san is the same as me and beaten those bad people and is now protecting me. I don't want to separate with someone like Onii-san, I thought of how can I be useful to Onii-san with all my might」

Lilith seems to like me seriously. I induced her to be like that but, it seems that Lilith thinks of me as a wonderful person more than I

thought.

There's no such thing but, if Lilith is glad with that, then shouldn't continue lying altogether at her.

「And you see, Mi-chan and onii-san decided to take care of me. And because I heard that the man loves naughty things, I have to do my best. But, my breast isn't big, so I thought that I may be useless but, I want to give it to Onii-san. We kissed, then I became an adult. ...Onii-san, thank you. I love you!」

Lilith confesses with a smile on her face, she clings to me demanding a kiss. Of course, I accepted it.

I hold Lilith's knee while kissing. With our skin touching, Lilith's temperature is transmitted. I slowly shake the body while feeling the pleasurable warmth.

Though her body writhes in agony at first, she never tries to separate her mouth. We separate to breath occasionally, but we stick back immediately.

Then, her lower mouth was the same too. Lilith's honey pot sticks to my penis and never tries to separate. It's wrapping up warmly to the base and the whole vagina strokes it gently.

The positive girl heals me warmly, that is Lilith.

「N...puha, Onii-san, it feels good?」

「Yeah, it feels good. How about Lilith? It doesn't hurt anymore?」

「Un, I'm okay. The connecting part with Onii-san feels so good I'm about to fly」

「I see, then I'll make you feel even better」

「Un, I'll do my best too. Nn」

While being slowly shook as it is, Lilith's voice begin to be colored sweet. I never attacked her intensely, we took time to raise our feeling to each other.

「N, Master, Misha too」

Lilith stealing me, had Misha raise her dissatisfied bored voice. I beckoned Misha and gripped her tail which is her weak point.

「Nya! Master! That's no good, myaaaaa...」

Misha lost all of her strength. She fell and rested her back on Lilith. Catching that, I made love with the two.

I hold Lilith with my right hand, and massages Misha's ass with my left hand.

「Myaaa... Master is unfair」

「Sorry Misha. But Lilith is my priority right now」

「Mu, it can't be helped」

Misha gave up and started to grope Lilith's small chest. Then, staring at Lilith's elf ears shaking, Misha bit it. Biting sweetly, she made her tongue crawl inside the ear.

「Hyowa! Mi-chan, thatsh!」

「Kapu...Rerorero...chu」

Lilith's body lose it's strength. Placed in between of me and Misha, unable to do anything but receive pleasure with her body.

「Ah, ah, ah, ah! You can't, Onii-san, Mi-chan, I'm flying! My head's going blank! Ah, Ah, Aaaaah!」

Lilith is approaching her limit, her vagina is winding up as if squeezing semen out. The stimulation is too vigorous like masturbating, her waist began to move selfishly.

「ooooooo! Amazing! Lilith, it feels really good!」

「Un! Onii-san, I'll make you feel better!」

「Sorry but i can't stop my waist. isn't it hard?」

「Uun1, It feels really good! Onii-san, move as you like! Aah!」

Lilith gives my pleasure a priority. I thrust even deeper inside Lilith's

vagina and began the last spurt.

「Ah, I'm about to cum! Misha, support Lilith!」

「Got it!」

「Hyowa! Hawaaaaa! Aaaaaa! Aaa! Aaaaa!」

Lilith can no longer utter a word entrusted herself to Misha. Then, slipping under Lilith, I pointed my penis to Lilith's mouth before I ejaculate.

「Lilith, it's the end. Kiss my penis!」

「N, Un! Chu...Churururu...」

Though Lilith was afraid earlier, she didn't resist this time. My intention was understood immediately, the grotesque penis smeared with blood and sexual fluids is tasted. Then, after learning the adult kiss, she licked the glans clean.

「Gu, Coming!」

「Nnn~~~!!!!」

I ejaculated inside Lilith's mouth.

Lilith doesn't separate her mouth and her cheeks puffed with semen. She believes Misha's lie that if she drinks semen her breast will grow.

I pulled out my penis when I finished ejaculating.

「Lilith-chi, don't worry」

Misha's guidance entered immediately. Lilith opened her mouth just as she was told and showed the semen inside. In spite that this was the second time this day, the sticky and syrupy semen forcibly dirtied the mouth of the loli elf.

When I told her that it's good, Lilith tries to swallow it but she couldn't swallow it well. Then, she was choked. The semen she wasn't able to swallow drips out of her mouth and falls to her thigh.

「Lilith are you okay?」

「I'm, okay. Cough... But, I spilled it」

Lilith looked at the semen she wasted, Misha licked it.

「Hyawa! Mi-chan, that tickles!」

「Picha...it's not wasteful」

The semen is licked by the two nude women. The scene was too lewd that it stirs up my excitement.

「The two of you, stand up. Thrust your hand on the bathtub and put face your ass here」

The two stick out their asses just like I said. Lilith's soft pure ass and Misha's tailed loli ass is lined up. Lilith spills blood from the deflowering, Misha's used pussy spills semen. Thinking that both of these asses are mine, I'm unable to endure it. I inserted the penis that just came inside Lilith's pussy.

「Hyawaaaa! Onii-san's thing entered again!」

「Lilith didn't come earlier right? I'll make you cum this time」

「Un, Onii-san, do as you like!」

I stood and penetrate Lilith's ass with a big stroke. The deep soft vagina hole won't be expected as a loli virgin just a while ago, the adult penis was gently accepted. A sense of security is felt when the penis is wrapped pleasantly.

Lilith's back bend as she's enduring the pleasure given. I had endured it to the limit earlier. It's not strange anymore if it ended.

「Ah! ah! Ah! Aaa! Onii-san, you're gentler than earlier」

「Isn't it hard?」

「Naa! I'm okay. it feels really good!」

Lilith saying that it's okay, pushes out her pure ass while tiptoeing.

While nailing my waist there, I play with Misha's ass at the same time. Rubbing the perfectly round ass, I stimulate her fully exposed anus with my finger.

「Myoooo! Master, that place!!」

Piin, Misha's tail extends. Misha seems to be sensitive in anal. Though she doesn't like it, I continued to do the surrounding of the entrance.

「Myo! Myowa! Nyowaaaaa!!」

Misha's body writhed intensely. It seems she feels quite comfortable.

The two's voice echoes in the bathroom is a delight on my ears.

As expected, loli is obedient and pretty. My scar from the fake Loli Misha is healed. My lost confidence is regained.

Showing my gratitude, I instill pleasure to the two of them.

「Hyawa! Ah! Aaah! Onii-san, I'm, Uu!! Hyowaaa!! Don't! Cumming!!」

Lilith seems to be reaching the limit. Clinging to the bathtub, her body is twitching.

「Very well, Lilith. Cum just like that」

The walls of her vagina is rubbed by my glans, Lilith is about to climax. Then, Lilith reached her limit immediately.

「Unnn~! I'm cumming! Cumming! Nnnnn~!!!!!」

Lilith's body jumped greatly. My violent penis enjoys the pleasure of her vagina, I stopped moving my waist and patted her head gently.

Lilith's expression looks enchanted and seeks a kiss. I answered it in the end and pulled out my penis.

Lilith falls to her knees. It seems that her waist lost power.

She sat on the floor and 'Hawa~', she's befuddled. It seems that she's satisfied.

Satisfying one pussy, I thrust in to the other.

「Nyaaaaaa ! Master, violent!」

「Isn't it the usual? Also, you're about to cum. Endure it」

「Mu~」

Misha's pussy is tight as always.

Pan Pan Pan Pan, the piston repeats. Misha was somehow or another spoke, she's pleased that I'm thrusting as she sticks out her ass.

Though slow sex with Lilith is nice but, this violent one is good as expected.

Seeing that intense sex, Lilith asked Misha.

「Mi-chan, does it feel good?」

「Nya, Un, Master's thrust feels good. What about Lilith-chi?」

「Un, I love it. It felt really good」

Lilith's ecstatic expression floats. It seems she likes sex.

I also like Lilith's pussy. It's deep and soft and very comfortable. When I got bullied by Matifa again, I'll have Lilith heal me again.

But before that, I have to say it properly to Lilith first.

「Lilith, just like this, don't reach your hand on anyone. Don't regret this now」

Lilith said that she likes me. But I don't intend to focus down on one person. It's already entered a so-called harem state, and I intend to increase it in the future. Normally, one wouldn't permit.

But, Lilith accepted it and removed my worry.

「It's fine. Onii-san is cool so everyone will come for you. Also, I'll definitely die early so Onii-san should take a lot of women so you won't be lonely」

For Lilith, it's a natural thing. She's not useful to anyone so far, so she wants to be useful for me. Lilith is really a cute and convenient girl for me.

「I see, then, best regards Lilith」

「Un!」

I draw Lilith's mouth and kissed her again. With this, Lilith is mine.

She'll never part with me.

「Nya! Master got bigger again! It hurts a bit, Nya, nyaa!」

「I'm about to cum so endure it」

「Myaaaa! Mashter, cumming?」

「Look, it's the finish. Cum too!」

「Myaaaaaaa! Master! Intense!!」

I put my hands on Misha's waist and did a high speed piston. A solid object shaves Misha's vaginal wall, love nectar is scraped out from the inside. Misha secrets love nectar to defend herself, the sliding improves steadily. And, I increased the speed even further2

「Myaaaaaa! Mashter, wait! this ish amazing! Cumming, cumming, cumiiiiing! Nyaaaaaaaaa!」

「Ooo, Misha, I'm cumming!!」

Dopyu! Byururu! I threw my semen inside Misha again. At the same time, Misha bend her back and reached climax.

When I pulled out my penis, semen from the two shots come out from her small ass.

Lilith watches is shyly.

「Waa, Mi-chan is too naughty. Are you okay being released inside?」

「Well, since I don't menstruate yet it's fine I guess」

Misha's not on the age where she can get pregnant so it's okay. I'm free to creampie her.

「Onii-san, what about me?」

「It's dangerous for you as your body is growing」

Lilith already had menstruated. If she gets pregnant while she's normally weak, I don't know what will happen. Since I don't want her to die, unfortunately but I strictly prohibit creampie. Elves has long safe day so I won't hold back at that time.

However, Lilith seems dissatisfied with the answer.

「Eh? I'm already an adult aren't I? Also, I want Onii-san's child!」

「Breast becomes big if you get pregnant. If you do, you'll win against Lululie?」

「Au, that's no good. Definitely no. ...Got it. My breast will be bigger than Onee-chan!」

「That's the spirit. Hey, lick this」

「Ah, Un. 」

When I showed Misha's ass, Lilith showed hesitation. However, she made up her mind and licked it, Perori, she licked the semen.

「Nyaaa! Lilith-chi?」

「Picha... It tastes Mi-chan and Onii-san」

Picha Picha, Lilith licks Misha's crotch. Because she licked me and swallowed up my semen, her resistance disappeared.

Then Kushun! A sneeze echoed.

The source of the sound is Lilith. It seems that her body had gone cold as she was naked the whole time.

This is bad, we ended our naughty time and washed off our body in a hurry.

I and Misha hurriedly wiped Lilith's body, when she put a change of clothes, Lilith became hot.

Since Lilith's futon can't be used, I laid her down on Lululie's futon. Though I'm worried if she could sleep well on that demonic field, it seems that Lilith is accustomed to it.

The doctor came immediately after I called him, it was diagnosed as cold.

I and Misha reflects on our lack of consideration and swore to ourselves not to do naughty stuff in the bath.

Chapter 39: Matifa's betrayal

I left Lilith who caught a cold to Misha and I walked around the outer wall alone. Felix should be arriving soon.

When I finished my deliberate preparations and stand watch the west of the town, a horse rider appeared raising a cloud of dust. It's a big black horse instead of the usual horse, aa middle aged man is straddling over it. It's the head of the Will Gantt marquis family, Felix. It's just a single horseman as the other can't follow him.

It's appearance has an air of a dignified character. He's the manly commander who repeatedly tries to aggress the Misumunto Kingdom army on the frontlines His ability is assumed to be just lower than A-class, he's the strongest knight before Lion appeared.

The sword is as manly as the user, it was said that when he swung the sword against the troll it was smashed to pieces.

At the entrance of the town, several horse carriages had been prepared, waiting for the aristocrats. Felix transferred to the carriage as soon as he arrived and he went straight to the castle. A confidential talk will be carried out.

The carriage arrived at the castle before long, Felix went to the throne immediately.

The conference room isn't used as it shows importance of the king. Felix giving in to the pressure for a bit has some ulterior motive I guess.

I became invisible and sneaked in with Felix.

The throne, in a nutshell is luxurious and gorgeous. There are some glittering decorations and flags lined up on the wall. A huge chandelier dangles overhead, on my feet is a red carpet spread over the marble pavement.

The leaders of the country are gathered in here.

King Ortiz sits down on the throne magnificently. From the back, the seats lined up against the wall have the royal family, Queen Angela, first

prince Radom, second prince Desire sitting on it. The vacant seat on the edge seems to be Seria's/

Getting down, standing on the track of the carpet is the prime minister Pienta and several cabinet members.

Among the cabinet, there is the head of the Mark Newt marquis house, Trovas. Though he has a figure of a pig, but if you turn your head around, he's a man with a first class magic skill. Despite that, his appearance is sore to the eye. If you removed the magic skill of Matifa, who's holding both a cabinet position and the imperial court mage, it is said that the imperial court mag would be a bright person. 1

In addition, there are several knights not less than Lion as guards. The beautiful grey haired woman wearing a black mantle and a three-cornered hat is standing still. Her appearance is different the magical power is without a doubt, Matifa. Why having an adult appearance?

I moved to a blind-spot and removed my invisibility, Matifa sent her eyes over here for an instant. As expected, she noticed me.2

Then, the meeting started immediately. The communication sticks with the formalities to moderation, then, it was Felix's turn to report. A considerable lie should be mixed by my expectations.

「I will begin to report the investigation about the attack, when the first princess Seria went to the the neighboring country, Misumunto Kingdom the other day. The time of attack was estimated to be the afternoon of the fourth day, All of the 20 assailants were dead. The situation of the attack—」

Felix indifferently briefed. The assailant's figure is uncertain but they speculated that it's a bandit based from the equipment There were traces of fights with the knights, the corpse were scattered on the road. They seemed to have tried to escape to the fort but the road was blocked by the landslide. All of the remainder corpse was confirmed at that place.

「Though it's thought that the corpse died in the fight along the way, it seems that on the landslide site, the death of the 5 knights and 16 bandits were done by a different person」

「Then, who is that person?」

Felix's way of speaking is assuming importance, Ortiz urged him as he's unable to wait.

「Assassin 『Beheader』」

「Wha! Beheader!?!」

The audience in the throne room became noisy. Apparently, the first report was received by Will Gantt house earlier in secret. I heard some disturbed voice here and there.

「Did he kill 21 people alone?」

「No, it should be impossible as expected. Assuming that Beheader is a B-class, but his battle power is C-class right?」

「That's right. There's no way to win against 5 imperial guard knights」

「Then, Seria-sama's scream is...」

「It's probably that. Pitiful child」

The cabinet had their own selfish expectations and delusions inflating.

Only Radom fell silent calmly. But, his eyes is burning with anger, it's as if he's cursing someone that's not here to death. Surely, he's angry at me who disrupted his plan. The offender being angry at the victim.

Only Matifa is the one laughing happily. She seems to be scheming something not good and it makes me uneasy.

But, the participation of the Beheader was recognized by the superior of this country.

In truth, it's supposed to not be known by anyone, but it can't be helped if it turned out this way. They don't know that I'm related to the beaheader, Master won't say anything so I'm okay.

「Silence!」

Silence returned in an instant when Ortiz scold the noisy leaders. It seems that it's the first time they saw Ortiz like that.

「Felix, Continue」

「Yes. The wagon Seria-sama used was burned on the site. Seria-sama's steps after that were unclear. We had investigated it even before leaving the territory, we still don't know how she came back to the castle」

After Felix's report ends, Ortiz asked to confirm.

「Then, the Beheader broke in during the fight of the bandits and knights and killed all of them? Then, you say that he sent Seria back the capital afterwards」

「Or perhaps, the Beheader captured Seria-sama and brought her to the capital, then she escaped by herself?」

Ortiz closed his eyes and pondered.

Felix's report makes no sense at all, it's impossible to be satisfied with just this. But, I guess that's the difference in authority as he doesn't blame him on public.

Trovas broke into silence. A noisy voice was raised from the bottom of the huge belly.

「Felix-dono. Isn't your attitude to his Majesty impolite? What is that report? Though Seria-sama was attacked in your territory, you don't understand anything? In the first place, bandits can't attack a carriage guarded with knights. There's a rumor that the assailants were your own troops. Someone rescued Seria-sama? Aren't you just putting the blame on some invisible assassin? Your Majesty, Leaving this matter to marquis Will Gantt and his knight troop is dangerous. Us, Mark Newt House will investigate it!」

One sided denunciation and claiming of non-existent right. But, only Mark Newt house is the only one who can oppose Will Gantt, It's a natural flow that they will join the investigation. Afterwards, the fabricated evidence of Will Gantt house was diminished, Will Gantt house screamed to hinder the investigation. If things go well, no one will be able to steal the credit for my plan for performing meritorious deeds by saving Seria

Also, it would be implied that they are more dominant in performance than the Will Gantt house.

They really are in bad terms.

Felix completely disregarded Trovas' provocation. He just waited for Ortiz's word silently. The surrounding noble were a bit noisy, but they fell silent immediately and watched Ortiz.

Ortiz wrinkle up his forehead, he's thinking about something patiently. At a glance, it looks like they surround and overpower the from the throne, but I can only think of it as the defendant's seat. Because the pressure given off by the two noble is quite strong. It's like a subordinate being blamed by the boss, I sympathize a bit. \

Before long, Ortiz opened his mouth.

「I want to ask Matifa-dono. Is it possible to transport Seria from the border to here in half a day?」

Matifa who was called stepped forward and expressed her opinion aimlessly.

「You asked the same thing the other day. My answer won't change. It's possible for me. Also, the flying dragon party of Misumunto and the fast footed tamed monster would be able to. However, it's difficult to do it without anyone finding out. Even if I use magic seriously, the person near me would notice immediately, you would also be alarmed immediately if it's a flying dragon. It will be witnessed in the highway if it's a beast. If Felix investigated, the possibility would be low. That Beheader surely has an amazing secret transportation skill. —Perhaps, he might even be here?」

Matifa ended her talk happily. She's definitely thinking of something no good. Does she intend to sell me out!?

「!! Matifa-dono, do you have a basis for that?」

Felix reacted to Matifa's words immediately. Only this fellow knows the truth. Namely, the beheader that slaughtered the 21 people to hinder kidnapping, bringing Seria for half a day. That's why, he can't ignore

Matifa's words.

Matifa answered proudly.

「Of course. Actually, there's an intruder in the castle for these past several days, he easily escaped the barrier that I have put. I throw in a familiar but the tables were turned on her too. Even I don't understand what his ability is. He's really amazing. It's a first time for me too. If it's him, he can surely bring back Seria」

Matifa told it like it's nothing.

Oi, don't joke with me!

What an ill-natured woman!

I feel really irritated on her grinning face!

She knows that I can't meddle in so she's doing it on purpose!

This what Master probably told about!!

It won't change no matter how much I curse her. It keeps turning worse instead.

Next, It was Lion who reacted. The moment that she said 'intruder', his hand was already on the holy sword on his waist.

「Matifa-dono, can you see where he is!?!」

「Of course. It's that shadow of that pillar」

Matifa didn't hesitate and spoke my location. Lion began to run the next moment.

Teleport—Too late!

I used the boost of flight and jumped out of the shade with all my power.

「Haa!!」

After a moment, the sword cuts the space where I was into two. Does this fellow intend to kill me!?

「!! You avoided it? Then!」

Lion continued to pursue. His speed is a bit faster or equal than Misha.

If it comes to this, I can't make a grudge on the ability. I concentrated on evasion with all my might.

Lion calmly jumped horizontally, rising up almost touching my feet. A slash was fired from that shining blade and the thick pillar was cut into two.

I push out a dagger to Lion while sweating cold, he bent his face and avoided skillfully. But, that's within my calculations. I controlled my altitude with flight ability, I let out a back kick from an impossible posture. The blade sticking out from the heel approaches the back of the head of Lion.

「!!」

Lion who caught the attack from the blind spot didn't even flinch. The damage hadn't reached his skin but it's only to a degree where it cut his beautiful long blonde hair. His defensive power isn't normal.

I fell as my flight ability is cancelled because I touched Lion's back.

Lion turned back and mowed his sword. I stuck to Lion's back to evade the blade part, but his arm hit and blew me off. The arm I used to guard hurts terribly.

「Majesty, permission to use magic!」

「Permitted. Catch him alive!」

Ortiz surrendered his life to Trovas' shout. Meanwhile, I become desperate and continue dodging Lion's pursuit.

When I was hit, I wrapped around a wire in Lion's arm and I throw the other out the chandelier. Lion regains his balance after cutting the wire.

I want to use teleportation but there's no chance to concentrate. I can run away with invisibility, but I was damaged with a even if I'm not seen, furthermore, it's no good if my judgement becomes dull.

A small injury is all right, but it's fatal in this situation to become stale even for a moment.

Lion switched tactics from big swings to fast movement. A two-consecutive attack was lunch instantly, I wasn't able to dodge it so my right arm and left thigh were significantly cut.

Blood spouts out vigorously from the cut the arteries. I'm already helpless when I lose mobility. I was unable to endure and ran away in the air.

「Flame Arrow」

Magic rushes on me who flew up. Trovas fired out 48 flaming arrows A magic that will become a fatal injury if you got hit with one. I fly around at full speed on the pillars lined up as shield. The pursuing arrow hit the pillar and ceiling and were scattered in pieces. The speed is equal. Just a small mistake in the course and it would catch up.

Sometimes, the fire arrows have Lion's slash mixed with it. I dodged everything with a paper-thin difference while going to the escape hatch. But, when I approached my path of retreat, Matifa summoned many low-class demons.

「Matifa you Traitor!」3

「That's upsetting. This much is nothing for you right? Please show me more of your power」

Matifa twist her mouth happily.

It's difficult to convince Matifa in this situation. I gave up escaping on the window and turned around.

From the back, Lion chases after using the wall and stone pillar as foothold. Just letting off guard for a bit, his slash flies immediately. Furthermore, Trova's fire arrows and Matifa's summoned demons hinder me. I can't lose my spirit for a moment. My field of vision grows hazy because I loose too much blood, my concentration has declined too. There's no more room for tricks anymore.

Furthermore, more enemy joined.

The moment I avoided Lion's slash, Radom appeared in front of me. He

raised his fist and strike at me.

「Diee! Beheader!!!」

「Ga!!」

I made the dagger intersect, it wasn't enough to receive it and was broken. Though I was able to evade a direct hit in the body, Radom's fist crushed my right arm bone. I fall to the hard floor while spinning.

「This is the end!」

Radom raised his fist with the look of anger. In addition, the fire arrow floats surrounding me, and Lion is waiting with his sword on the outside. I can no longer escape. It was the moment I thought I died.

「Waiiiit!!!」

Ortiz's roar rang between the throne.

Radom, Lion, and Trovas stopped moving. I quickly throw a smoke ball and used teleportation.

Chapter 40: New Commission

I teleport to my room and that's where I lost consciousness.

Next thing I know is I woke up on the bed. Cathy was next to me.

It seems that my life has been saved.

「Sorry, I was beaten badly」

「No, don't mind it. It's good that you lived, let's think of that for now」

Today's Cathy is unusually gentle. When I looked at my own body, my wounds were treated and had bandages applied.

「My wounds...」

「Master came and cured it. However, please take a rest tonight」

「Master... What did he say?」

「He said that you lost just according to the schedule」

「...Dammit, everyone is just toying with me!」

I swung my fist down to the bed.

Even Matifa, Even master, just what do they think of me?

Matifa absolutely enjoyed that situation. Though I don't know what she's thinking nor her plans, there's no doubt that she exposed me for her own entertainment.

Master is being Master. Knowing that this will happen, he sent me to guard Seria. Nevertheless, he drove his disciple to death without any warning. I wonder if he thinks I'm better off dead.

「You seem to be quite angry. Could you tell me what happened?」

Cathy only asked me calmly. Thanks to that, my brain cooled off a little.

「——Got it」

Then, I told Cathy the daytime events. What Felix reported in the capital. The leaders of the country and strong men gathered together in a place, then Matifa's betrayal. Then, taking an all-out attack, and having

barely run away.

「If Master didn't go all out at you from the beginning, you might've died. It seems that it's not Lion's full power, as expected it's useless to fight someone with that class」

「Well, that's true. If you can do that, you'll be a Hero」

Hero——A person who can get over any hardships and rescue many people. If someone can force to hold down that situation, it's not impossible for him to destroy or rescue a country.

「You must be joking. I'm not a hero but the one being beaten by the hero. Rather than that, what's the current situation?」

Just how long was it after I fainted? What happened after the meeting? What's the state of the castle? Is Seria safe? What about Lululie? Did Misha betray me too? Various questions run through my head.

「It's been half a day since you passed out. The date is about to change soon. I took over the guard duty you received from Lululie. She was surprised when I went to the castle gate to meet her, but that's probably okay. Elves hate and are wary of dark elves, but she was convinced when I said I'm an acquaintance of Ren. I told her that you're injured and is taking care of something」

「I see, sorry about that」

「No, I'm your assistant after all」

It seems Cathy had dealt with Lululie. She may be useless in some places but she's much more experienced than me. There's no need to worry.

She's really a reliable elder sister.

「You know Misha's state?」

「It's that cat girl beast right? She seems to have noticed me but she didn't take any strange behavior. But, we must be cautious」

「You're right. Should I check on that?」

If it was decided, she can't enter. The wound still hurts but I didn't mind it. I can't say so sure that Seria, Lululie, and Lilith are safe. I must move.

However, Cathy holds me down.

「Please take some rest」

「Like hell I can. After seeing Misha's state, I will check Seria's safety. Then, I'll interrogate Matifa. I'll leave you to guard Lululie. Please keep watch whether Misha is doing bad」

Matifa is already an enemy. I don't think I will win but it's clear that she had betrayed me. I could destroy the research building at minimum. If it comes to this, then it's do or die resistance.

Cathy looked at me angrily and sighed. It seems that persuasion is impossible already.

「Even if I told you you won't listen. Then, Ren, there's an additional commission from Master」

Then, Cathy took out the parchment and parcel which is rolled on the nearby stand.

「Additional commission is the assassination of Matifa Lau Ell Pito. Master gave this as this is necessary」

A pair of dagger was taken out from the package. It's a cursed black sword with ancient characters carved into it.

It's different from the fake the three idiots I have. The magical power dwelling on it is the real thing.

「This is...」

「It's a cursed sword that absorbs magic. Though it's a top class cursed sword that sucks up the magical power of the owner, it doesn't matter to you. It's an order that you will use that and kill the witch of supreme time」

Cathy described it cool-headedly.

Basically, master's orders are absolute. If you declined, you'll go

through a fearful experience. Still, it's better than dying.

This has an entirely different reason from guarding Seria. The reason why I risk my life is because I want to protect Seria.

But, what's the meaning of this commission.

No, is it possible in the first place?

「...Do you seriously think I can?」

「At least Master thinks you will」

Cathy answered my question in an instant. I think it's not just master but Cathy as well think it's possible.

Can I kill Matifa? That's difficult in two meaning.

First, the difference in overwhelming power. She has a vast amount of magical power and bottomless magic. It's impossible to break up in front.

She probably has some measures against surprise attack kills. I can't go in using teleportation. And, I have no chance of winning in direct combat.

Next would be my feelings. The woman who slept with me betrayed me. I became attached to her. Can I possibly kill her?

Thinking what to do, Cathy talked to me, pressing for answers.

「It seems you're worried. However, your body is in danger if you don't do it. I honestly don't know what the witch called Matifa can do. If this escalates just like that, you'll die the following day. Isn't it wise to kill her as master said before it's too late?」

「...That's true」

The talk ended with that. Though I didn't make a clear answer, I received the cursed sword.

I felt the cursed sword handed to me awfully heavy.



After talking to Cathy, I turned up to Lululie's house to see how Misha is before going to the castle.

I entered quietly to not wake someone but Lululie is already awake in the middle of the night.

Lululie noticed me and called out to me with a surprised voice.

「Ah, Ren-san, you were safe!!」

「Were you up and waiting for me?」

「Yes, I feel uneasy. Lilith and Misha-chan were awake until now, as one would expect, they're put to sleep」

Lululie stares at my body intently. Then, she noticed the bandage wound on my arm and she touched it gently.

「You really are hurt. Are you all right?」

「I'll get better as soon as the treatment ends. Sorry I wasn't able to pick you up today」

7「No, please don't mind it. I'm relieved that you're safe more than anything else」

Lululie felt relieved. Though she heard from Cathy that I can't come, she waited for me specially.

「Sorry to worry you. But, are you fine without sleep?」

「I'm so uneasy that I can't sleep. As I mentioned yesterday, my father died when he was attacked by a demon...」

「You did say that. But, be relieved as I'm alive」

It seems that Cathy pretended that I was attacked by a demon. If that's the case, Lululie's worry is understandable.

That time, my stomach grumbled. Come to think of it, I hadn't eaten anything after breakfast.

Lululie giggled silly.

「Ren-san, have you eaten dinner yet? Should I make a light midnight snack?」

「No, you should sleep already. You have work tomorrow right?」

「It's fine. The injured person should take a rest」

Leaving that unsaid, Lululie disappeared to the kitchen. I confirmed Misha's state meanwhile.

Misha is lying down on the bed with Lilith. The blanket was off and her belly is exposed. Seeing her sleeping face, I can't see her plotting something.

If I kill Matifa, what would Misha think? Will she get angry? Or sad? She might even come for me as revenge.

What about if I got killed? I think she'll be sad but the possibility of her being glad as he was freed from being a slave isn't zero.

What should I do?

Lululie returned to the living room with the midnight snack she made for me.

Lululie seeing me threw out a question.

「You look gloomy. Are you worrying about something?」

「...Does it really come out of my face?」

「Yes, a face that's facing hardships. You can consult me if you're okay with it」

Lululie sits down, looked straight to my eye and asked. Words naturally leave my mouth.

「Just a bit, I was betrayed by someone I thought is a companion」

「Betrayal is it? Then you were injured with that. Do you know the reason?」

「She2 probably means no harm It's like a child prank. But, it's not a prank on a permissible level. Depending on the case I will...」

Kill. I didn't say it. When I said that, it will be denied certainly. If that happens, I won't be able to put my hand on Matifa anymore It's easier to run that way. But, what's most important isn't Matifa. I mustn't make a mistake on my priorities.

Lululie listened to me then pondered. Then, she began to speak slowly.

「Is it a child's prank? Lilith often plays prank at me too. I do scold her but it does not heal easily. After Ren-san came she became docile but she's originally lively. But, that person isn't a child but an adult isn't it? I think an adult must atone properly」

Lululie express her honest opinion.

Certainly, that's correct as an adult. Even if Matifa has a form of a child, her inside is still a splendid adult. If it's her, I have to draw the line properly.

However, Lululie continued to speak.

「But if Ren-san suffers from it, then you don't have to do the impossible, right? For example, I think the best method would be to cut all your ties with her」

Lululie was worried about me till the end. A way for my fear to escape my body was presented.

Cut off relations with Matifa. But that means giving up on Seria and not entering the castle at all. I can't do that.

At the point where I got related to person called Matifa, I can no longer prepare an escape.

However, What Lululie said isn't meaningless. She's an outsider who knows nothing. Therefore, I will receive her sentiment for now.

「That's right. There's also that method」

「Yes, that's why, please don't force yourself too much. You can always consult me anytime, I'll even hear your grumbles」

Then, the talk ended. I took over the cleaning of dishes and I forced Lululie to sleep.

I decided to do nothing about Misha for now. I tidy up while she's sleeping, Misha doesn't seem to be a hindrance.

1. Aal izz Well!

2. It's a pronoun game, he doesn't mention the gender.

Chapter 41: Worry

After Lululie slept, I went to the castle alone.

I thought that I might not be able to pass through the barrier of the castle anymore, but I passed through without problems. It seems that Matifa still intends to welcome me.

I go around the nights yawning in the castle. The uproar during daytime is probably the reason of the increase of personnel. I won't make a mess to be caught in this degree, but it doesn't chance that it's a troublesome thing.

Then, I reached Seria's room slightly later than usual.

There's no changes here in particular.

I thought that she's already asleep but she's lying in the bed idling.

I used a key to open and check the window. Entering while paying attention to traps, Seria noticed me and turned over.

「So you were alive!」

「Y-Yeah」

Seria talked to me vigorously in surprise. In addition, she jumped out the bed with an angry look.

「I heard it from father. It was you who sneaked in the audience, right!? And you were injured greatly. When you didn't come in the evening, I thought you have died!」

「What? You're worried? It should've been convenient for you if I died!」

「I-I'm not worried at all! ...Then? Is your injury already fine?」

For some reason Seria is showing tsun-tsun. It seems that Seria is worried about me.

「Yeah, the treatment already ended, I'm fine. But, since I can't do extreme movements, let's postpone for the other day!」

「You seem to be energetic enough to make a joke. Geez, it became hard

for you to evade because you came here in succession.]

Seria turned away while speaking in an angry tone.

I stubbornly asked what happened after the audience was over. Ortiz have questioned the two brothers and Lion. Still, Seria doesn't know what passed through.

「If you've got a complain, tell that to Matifa. It's all her fault」

「I heard about it. I don't know the reason but it was unfortunate. However, it's no good if you do something bad. I was deserted the day before yesterday, and only cruel things ahead of that. Additionally, you sneaked during the audience, you can't complain if you got killed」

As expected, Seria being my foremost victim won't be on my side. I reap what I saw so it can't be helped.

「Also, weren't you the Assassin named Beheader who's making a ruckus in the streets, aren't you? Just how many people have you killed? Just how many bad things you'll do before you get satisfied?」

Far from being an ally, Seria has started to sermon suddenly. Why am I being scolded by a younger girl?

「No, that's...」

「I didn't think of you to be that kind of person. Somehow or another, I thought of that because you saved me. But, I was wrong. I was disillusioned as you're an assassin who killed many innocent people. Is it right in your world to kill a person? IS the peaceful country you talked about three years ago a lie? Hey, what is it?」

Seria kept talking without hearing my excuse. She began to mind my wrongdoings after knowing my safety. It seems she's really angry. Or rather, isn't the change in her attitude from the other day too fast? Where did Seria's fear of me go?

「Calm down a bit. My story doesn't matter anyway」

「It's not! I decided! I will absolutely reform you. Then, I'll make you say sorry!」

Seria thrust her finger out. Her heavy breast shakes at the same time.

There won't be a problem if I just apologized but Seria seems to be serious. Her way of thinking that's sweeter than sugar is one of her qualities.

「This won't finish the story with just a sorry I guess...」

「Still. You should apologize properly and make up for your crimes. First of all, Apologize to me. But still I won't forgive what you did to me」

「No, don't forgive me. Also, I won't be able to play with you if I apologized, right? I'll never apologize」

「Then I won't forgive you either. I might expose you just like what Matifa-sama did」

「You're different from Matifa. You can't do that」

「You don't know that」

「No, you can't. I can ascertain that」

「Mu...」

That's right, that's the decisive difference between Matifa and Seria.

Seria dislikes to hurt others. That's why, she can't imitate actions which exposes others to danger. She'd rather sacrifice her own instead of doing that sort of thing. I don't know what will happen if she's really cornered but, normally, it's unlikely for her to expose me.

But, Matifa didn't think that far. She's an egoistic person that does what she wants and doesn't consider the danger for others. The result, the surroundings display various suffering. I almost died this time. Perhaps, she might've damaged a lot of humans until now. Then, if I leave her alone she won't stop with me as a victim.

Even Seria the other day, had been played by Matifa after she dried me out. Though I didn't see it because I returned, she still had some hard time.

「Hey, from your point, how do you see Matifa?」

「How?」

「Yeah, I see her as dangerous, but how do you see her?」

「Let's see...」

‘Uun’, Seria put her elbow against her hand and pondered.

「I'm a bit envious of Matifa-sama. Matifa-sama is strong, beautiful and a free person. I often think if I have that strength. Especially, recently it's large」

Seria stared at me. Don't stare at me so much

「Also, Matifa-sama is my teacher in magic. She teaches me strange magic occasionally but she's usually a good teacher who teaches thoroughly」

Could it be that magic is Matifa's work? She's really good.

But, Misha is also good, so I guess she's good at taking care of someone. I guess it's the elderly-grandchild precious theory I guess.

「But, there's a place I couldn't think about. Though she's talkative and is speaking on us royalty casually, she never spoke her real feelings. However, it was slightly different when she was with you」

「In what way?」

「It's the first time I saw Matifa-sama getting so emotional. Normally, she's cold. Also, did you notice it to? When your interest is directed at me, Matifa-sama is really angry. Her anger looks cute but she's serious. I know that as a woman」1

Seria confirmed that it's certain.

Certainly, she was dissatisfied but I didn't think she's angry to that extent. But, I guess it's different for Seria.

「She's angry? I only see her acting playfully with me」

「Yes, she's angry. Although I can't understand it in the slightest, Matifa-sama seriously love you. Yet, you lust over this and that... Do you intend to make a harem? If you do that you'll be stabbed by someone like

Matifa. Though she said that she's fine being a mistress, I can't possibly think she's satisfied with that」

Seria began to say something incredibly horrible. Certainly, she might've squeezed me dry because I made her angry. But, being dried out is merely a result ?

Seeing me shudder, Seria continued to talk.

「Also, there's something that still bothers me」

「What?」

「Matifa-sama's magical power. It's not of a human's. She seemed to have lived for a long time, she might've been burdened with such a big thing. She showed it to you, she wants you to know」

「She wants me to know?」

「Yes, she did. It's said that when a woman shows her ugly self it has a big meaning. It might be a test to make you feel relieved but I can't think of anything else other than that. I don't know it's meaning but, surely this must be connected to today」

What does Matifa want me to know? If I can know it, can she be understood?

But, I can't understand it at all. I can't come to understand.

Matifa doesn't say the important thing, so I can't guess it well.

Then, Matifa doesn't speak to me who can't understand, the same thing repeats. One day, I'll seriously die.

「Hey, who do you think would win if I and Matifa fought?」

「...What are you saying so suddenly? Do you intend to fight Matifa-sama?」

「Just answer」

「Geez. Please don't fight no matter what. One of you will definitely die. I don't want to see that. You should become Matifa-sama's pet rather than fighting her. I'll be at peace if you do so, and it would solve

everything」

Seria judges that I would seem to win against Lion, and I'm equally matched against Matifa.

Also, being Matifa's pet is rejected.² It'll be insufficient no matter what.



In the end, I left Seria's room without doing anything. I'm alone right now, staring at the starry sky from the castle's roof

The starry sky seen here is different from Earth. There's no Orion belt, Scorpio nor the Dipper. However, only the milky way flowed through the starry sky of this world.

While immersing in a nostalgic mood, I remembered what everyone said.

Master ordered to kill Matifa. I don't understand the reason but it's Master. He's probably thinking about a foolish thing like world peace.

Cathy also agreed. In her case, it's because she's worried about me. In other words, Cathy judged Matifa to be dangerous.

Lululie said that I should cut our relationship. I agree with that, I think that's the best method. Matifa is the type that gets conceited if you let her do more. But the real situation, there's no effective way to break off our relations.

Seria told me to become Matifa's pet³ That's bullshit.

Also, I didn't hear anything from Misha who knows Matifa the most. Though there's the possibility that Matifa has a hidden reason, in the end I ran away because I was too scared to hear the answer. If I got betrayed by Misha, I would be hard for me to know what to do. Therefore, It's necessary to conclude it tonight while Misha is asleep.

「What's up with that...」

This is the first time I got worried about killing someone. It's natural for a human to die, I grant death for granted.

But, what about Matifa?

She betrayed me, I almost died. That's enough reason for me.

It's too dangerous to keep her company any longer. What that girl can do can escalate further. If that happens, I clearly won't be safe. If I think rationally, I should take care of her before it's too late.

But, she cooperated with me. Making me pass through the castle's barrier helped me very much.

It's fortunate that her interest is poured into me. She shows no behavior of attacking anyone other than me for the moment.

Normally you would attack Seria who's a rival in love. If Seria had died in an accident and she treat me kindly, I'm confident that I would easily be deceived. She's really a sick person to the core. But, I didn't see that behavior from her. Does she really love me?

I remembered my first time meeting Matifa. She was lonely. She's seeking a person's warmth after living for a long time alone. Her figure is artificial but her content is a human.

However, I wonder if she's looking at me? Did she just see me because I and my ability were special?

My doubts are endless.

In the end, I know nothing about Matifa. Thus, I can't come into conclusion no matter how I think.

「I don't think about these things before...」

I headed to Matifa's place without reaching conclusion.

Chapter 42: Farewell

I finally arrived at Matifa's research building. Should've noticed that I have come. I opened the door to Matifa's room while being careful if there are traps or barrier.

「Hi, welcome. For you to be able to move with that wound, you seem to have an excellent healer as an acquaintance」

Matifa didn't receive me timidly, instead she welcomed me in her usual tone. Her appearance is the adult woman. Although her nice chest is boldly exposed, I'm not in that mood today.

「Matifa, what do you plan to do during daytime, Depending on your reply, you might not get out of this unscathed.」

I threw my words with bloodlust included in it. Matifa parried it calmly.

「Oh? Are you angry? I was just playing around. I want to brag about you that it slipped out of my mouth. That's because they doubted your ability. I can't forgive that. Isn't it natural for me as your woman to think that you should receive recognition? Also, you won't die with just that. Actually, you lived and visited me even」

There's no change in Matifa's attitude as expected. If Ortiz didn't stop them that time, or if Cathy and master didn't treat me, I would've died without fail. But, despite that, this fellow only think that it's a small degree.

「Matifa, you're not willing to repent?」

「Of course, I'm reflecting on it. When I thought that you would be killed by Radom, my heart's beating stopped. I overdid it. It was my bad」

Though she said that she's sorry, there's no signs of remorse in her attitude at all. This fellow will surely do the same thing again.

I fear that it's likely true up until now. When she likes a a man, she probably play around and beat them until they die or run away.

This is the true color of the Witch named Matifa. If left alone, I would

also be lead to the road of destruction. I must stop right here right now.

「Are you really sorry?」

「I think so. Also, even if Ortiz didn't stop them that time, I would not let you die no matter what. That's because I can't think of losing you. That's why, don't worry. As long as you're in this castle, you'll never die」

Matifa's hand wrapped in black gloves extends to my cheek. Then, she stroke it gently like admiring a treasure.

But, I don't think I would be entangled by this snake. Unable to bear it, I removed her hand.

Still, Matifa's attitude didn't change.

「Were you able to be close to death? Also, when you revealed my identity, I'll definitely be captured and killed. Yet, you think that you can convince me with those words?」

「Of course, I understand. I even thought of running you away that time. I'll defend you without fail」

Matifa is making a plea while spreading both her hands. Of course, I won't yield to that temptation.

「You're just cornering people. Are you disregarding my will?」

「I respect your will at most. That's why I didn't obstruct your date with Seria, aren't you managing inside the castle freely? If you'd like, I can protect you along with Seria. You two can just flirt at a safe place until the internal matters settle down. Even if Lion came, I can do something about it」

I moved and Matifa approached me. She embraced me and pressed into her soft chest. It seems that a poison of seduction is loaded to her every action and gesture, I raised my vigilance.

「What do you want to do?」

「What do I want to do? Didn't I just say it? I want to learn everything about you. I got a considerable amount of data of your ability from today's battle. It was meaningful and I found out something new. For

instance, you can't use two abilities at the same time」

「I didn't hear that. Why are you here? For what are you living for?」

「My purpose on living? That's quite a philosophical question. Let's see...nothing in particular, maybe? Although I do like magic research, that's not my purpose for living. It's merely killing time. When there's nothing to do, I often just sleep through the years」

Matifa seems lonesome in some respect. Living for such a long time, she doesn't have a purpose for living. Then just what is supporting Matifa for her to put up with the hundreds of years up until now?

「But, I'm having fun right now. Because you're here right now」

Matifa whispered in my ears. Her hand coils my back and her legs entwine. If this goes on, I'll be eaten by this witch.

「I can't understand. You're living because you don't want to die? Or is it that you can't die?」

「There's no such thing. Although I overcame my life span, I'd die if I get killed.² But because I'm afraid to die, I don't think I can kill myself. Also, there was no one who was able to kill me in the past. That's why I am still living to this date. But, I'm able to feel you this way because I'm living. I love you. ³ ——Ah, I see. I'm sure I was born to meet you」

Then, the embracing Matifa moved to the bed.

I don't understand what Matifa is thinking. But, I do know that she wants me earnestly, but I don't understand what makes Matifa attracted so much.

She's like this from the beginning. Appearing suddenly, demands me one-sidedly, then exhaust me. The exchange of words keeps escalating more and more.

Matifa surely doesn't look at me. She's only feeling the me who has an unknown ability, true colors, just man who came from the other world with a unique history and special nature.

She's not seeing me as a sole person but a sign of a special existence.

Otherwise she won't like someone like me.

「Matifa, why do you want me?」

「That's quite an ambiguous question. I wonder if you want to make love right now. Although I saw your body fall down today, it hurts but it can't be helped. It's been a while since I had an adult form and I thought that this body would delight you. It seems that you like those who have big breasts」

Then, Matifa threw me in the bed then pressed her indecent breast. The elastic chest changed shape when it was squashed.

I still can't comprehend her words. The things I and Matifa see are too different. I do not know what she seeks. She surely has gone crazy.

「That's not it, Matifa. What are you expecting from me?」

「Expectation? Let's see, I expect from you... But, I'm hesitating whether I should say it to you. You are fine as your own. There's no need to worry about what I say」

Saying that, she kissed me. The sticky saliva and tongue were sucked in. The soul seems to be sucked together with the saliva, fear boils up. The groin was groped at the same time. If this continues, I'll be squeezed and wither just like usual.

I separate my lips from Matifa then made a last question.

「Matifa, could you stop it? I'm not in the mood right now」

「What? Even though it's rare for me to take an adult form, you're so cold. If there's an injury I can back-it up so there's no need to worry. Or are you still angry on about earlier? If so you can vent it out on my body. It's okay, I'll accept it all」

Then, Matifa stuck her mouth again.

I convicted myself as my mouth is being violated. It's already too late for Matifa. She's already broken and mad. Even if I associate myself with her, I can't accompany her as I'm only a human. Even if she thinks that I'm a special, I'm just a nobody. Also the lowest class that raped a

woman.

There's only one thing I can do for Matifa. I will bring an end to her long life.

This is for mine and for her sake.

I pulled out quietly the dagger I received from Master.

If this dagger negates magical power, then it won't have a problem against Matifa's absurd magical power.

I turn my hand and hugged Matifa like a lover.

Matifa who's absorbed in the kiss doesn't notice at all.

I can kill her right now.

There's no time but now.

I'll do it if it's me.

There's no one who can do it but me.

I swing the dagger I'm holding backhand.

There's the feeling of the blade piercing soft meat.

Without the resistance of the dense magical power, the point of the blade sank deeply.

Before long, I damaged the lungs and reached the heart—

「You can't do that Master!!」

My hand was held down by Misha who appeared suddenly. The blade stopped half buried. But, there should be a fatal wound—

「...You, I wonder what this is?」

Matifa who separated her mouth had her voice echoing from the bottom of the earth.

The red blood dripping from her mouth stained my lips. Though it should've been a considerable critical hit, Matifa doesn't mind the wound and glared at me with pupils dyed in darkness.

「Shit!」

I tried to swing down my dagger while swearing but my body doesn't move. Matifa dominated my body in an instant.

Matifa's hand extends to my neck.

「I want to hear what you're doing. I wonder why you attacked me. I do love you. I even gave Misha as a present, I also lent you my power. I gave you my body. Yet, why can't you respond to my love?」

「Wait, Matifa-sama! Master too!」

Ignoring Misha's precense, Matifa lifts up my body. It's impossible to resist. The assassination is a complete failure.

「T-The first one who betrayed was you! If I associate with you any further I would die! It's already impossible!」

「Didn't I tell you not to worry? Also, if It's you, that degree shouldn't matter」

「Where are you getting that confidence! What do you know about me!? You aren't seeing a single bit in me! You're pushing your own ideals selfishly!」

Matifa is only seeing her ideal in me. She's imagining me as a perfect person, she's convinced that I'm that kind of person. She trusts that I'm a hero-like existence that an overcome no matter what kind of problem there is.

But, I'm not that sort of human. I'm just an ordinary person who lives filthily. I'm not a splendid human who stands up no matter what kind of wound is inflicted. I can't endure the trial Matifa imposes.

「That's not true. You're obviously a special human. If you'd like, should we prove it?」

Saying that, Matifa smiled wickedly.

「What do you intend to do」

「It's simple. I'll be keeping your most important thing. You will show

that you can recapture her back splendidly from me. What? If it's you, you can do it. Just like I told you, you're a special person!]

「Wha! You, Seria is unrelated!」

「The limit is until daybreak. You will cure your body and take Seria from my hand. If you can't, Seria's safety isn't guaranteed. Even if you did it, lecture is waiting for you!]

Matifa threw me to the bed and went out of the room without hearing my response. It's possible to go ahead with teleportation but it's useless to get ahead because my body can't move. Even if Seria was freed, I can't go out of the castle. It's the worst situation.

While I was grinding my teeth, Misha moved instead.

「Master, are you okay?」

「Dammit! What do you think you're doing! Also, what happened to Cathy!」

「Since Master is acting strangely, I followed secretly. The dark-elf onee-chan is okay since I just ran away!]

Misha answered indifferently.

I felt disturbed as Misha got up and followed me unnoticed.

「Why did you stop me!? You're Matifa's ally after all?」

「No. I stopped Master because he's mistaken. This is the medicine!]

Misha took out the magic purification medicine and shoved it in my mouth. With this, I should be able to move after a while. But, that alone won't make it easy to take back Seria from Matifa.

Continuing, Misha looks after my body. Then, she noticed the bandage wound on my body.

「Master, you're injured!]

「I was close to death earlier because of Matifa!」

「Un, then I'll cure it!]

This time, she took a black cloth from the pouch. It's Matifa's panties that also has some healing effect. Misha covered my face with it without hesitation.

「Stop! Don't cover me with that thing!」

「No, treatment is a priority」

Misha defied my order, her face distorts as the slave contract brought pain.

There's no power left for me to resist now.

Chapter 43: Misha's Feelings

Matifa's cursed panties has three effects.

To be able to slip through the barrier of the castle, to be able to heal wounds and recover stamina, and compulsory peerless effect.

My son got mad when I was covered with it. Despite it not reacting when Matifa caressed it earlier, because of the cursed panties, it got erect forcefully. 1

Misha noticed it of course. Then, she took action just like what a slave should take. In other words, she began to comfort it.

「Master, I'm sorry. But endure it for now」

Misha rubs my son on top of my pants. In the end, it's the same as Matifa.

Now's not the time to drown in pleasure. I have to know Misha's true intention and take back Seria from Matifa.

I asked before Misha's hand come under my pants.

「Misha, why did you stop me?」

「Because Master is trying to kill Matifa-sama. That's why I stopped you」

Misha's answer was simple. However, Misha's master isn't Matifa anymore but me.

「That's for me to decide. It's not for a slave like you to decide」

「It's not. Master has misunderstood Matifa-sama. Matifa-sama is the same. Actually, there's no need to kill」

「That's because you don't know what just happened!」

「Un, Misha doesn't know. But, I know. At any rate, Matifa-sama overdid it and Master was angry」

Misha's attitude speaks like she knows it. I wonder if this turned out as expected.

「If you know then why did you hinder me? At this rate I will die. Is that your aim?」

Though Misha is a slave, if I, who is her master dies, the binds would disappear Furthermore, Misha is strong right now. She won't fail and fall into slavery again.

But, Misha shook her head to my question.

「It's not. If it's Master, you won't die. Even if someone else dies, Master would be fine」

Misha looked at my eyes confidently.

「What's your basis for that? Why are you saying something so irresponsible!」

「If it's Master, Matifa-sama should know. That's why, Matifa-sama can be stopped. Also, if it's Master, no matter how strong the opponent, you won't lose」

Misha is speaking absurdly. This fellow is the same as Matifa, they're having blind belief with me. That's why I denied Misha's words.

「I don't know what she's thinking but if I lose I die! You're pressing your own ideals just like Matifa!」

「Wrong!!」

Misha shouted. It's a shout that made me think that it tear off my eardrums.

It's the first time I heard such a voice from Misha. Her expression is always shown by her ears and tail and she spoke indifferently in her mouth. She put her feelings in her words right now, Misha spoke with all her might to convince me.

「It's wrong! Master, you don't know a thing about Matifa-sama. Master. Never knew a thing about Matifa-sama! Even though you two love each other, you can't become lovers! That's what I don't understand!」

Misha is pleading while crying.

「Misha you see, I know Matifa-sama before Master met her. Matifa-sama always looked so bored, so lonely, in pain. Although there's no tears, Matifa-sama is always crying」

She cried all the time before I came. I'm sure it's true. Matifa lived alone all this time, she had cried in solitude. Even the fool of me can imagine that.

「It changed when Master appeared. She looks like she enjoys it, so happy, everyday she kept saying that she wants to meet you sooner. When will he come again? She plays with Misha everyday while saying that」

Even so, I can't understand. She found me and moved her expectations to me. Then she expands her delusion selfishly. Surely, during the seven days I travelled with Seria, Matifa's delusion has swelled that it's impossible to control anymore.

「Then, Master came, Matifa-sama is overjoyed. But, when Master came to Seria-sama's place, she fell down. Depressed, angry, she ordered Misha to kill. Matifa-sama was serious that time. Matifa probably doesn't know but she seriously intend to kill Master」

Maybe that's the reason why Matifa was mad that time. Matifa's hatred made her pour out her confined magical power, she start to move as if wanting to kill me. Then, when I got serious, I knocked down Misha.

「But, Master didn't lose against Misha. Even Matifa didn't think I would lose. Then, when Matifa-sama appeared, Master didn't run away. Even bathing with Matifa-sama's magical power, you didn't run away nor go mad. Usually, everyone goes crazy if they bathed in Matifa-sama's magical power. Just Master is the only one who can speak with Matifa-sama equally」

Seria said the same thing too. Certainly, Matifa's magical power is abnormal. Especially the magical power she shoots out the first time we met isn't normal. Understanding the strength of my opponent, that magical power can make someone go mad. Even I can't calm down. But because everyone around me as a stronger magical power than me, I got used to fear.

「Misha, certainly, I spoke to Matifa normally.. But, that's it. I don't understand Matifa, Matifa doesn't understand me either. There's no way we can understand each other」

「That's not true! Master should be able to understand if you took a step further. Because Master was able to notice Matifa-sama's suffering from the first time. Also, Master hadn't seen it. That's why you torment Misha in anger」

That was said when I had sex with this two for the first time. That time, I was so irritated by Matifa's long talk so I threw my resentment to Misha.

Did I notice Matifa's true nature that time?

I should've...noticed. Her words were clumsy, she doesn't understand a single thing about me and yet she spoke as if she knows me well and it was very irritating. Was I thinking that she's a pitiful fellow? But that's the first mistake.

「Misha you see, I thought that time that Master understood Matifa-sama. I thought that Matifa-sama's rampage would stop. But, Master doesn't understand at all. Master, doesn't know Matifa-sama's true nature. Matifa-sama doesn't want to die in the slightest. Master, think about Matifa-sama properly」

Misha appealed to me desperately. Misha must've known what Matifa yearns for. But, she doesn't tell me. I'm sure that it's something that I have noticed already. If I understood it, will I and Matifa understand each other?...

Misha issued a hint to me who guessed badly.

「Please remember. What kind of clothes Matifa-sama is wearing?」

「What? Isn't it the goth loli dress?」

「Where was Matifa-sama?」

「Where? She's at the research building. 」

「Where is it?」

「It's in the castle」

「What does Matifa-sama Like?」

「What? I don't know but for the time being, me. What about other magic?」

「Asides from that, did you hear anything?」

「Also, she wrote an erobook, she also likes fairy tales...」

「Something else coming into your mind?」

「And...」

Misha made me remember it one by one. Where and when Matifa appears, her speech and conduct that time, likes and tastes, she combined and made me remember each and every trivial gestures and clothes. It's like a puzzle where the piece is joined together one by one, something hidden inside is guessed logically. It's a simple suggestion game. Then, the conclusion I arrived at is—

「...Ah, got it」

One word emerged in my head. It's such a childish answer. It's too childish that I laughed.

However, it is convincing given the action and words of Matifa. The meaning of all of her consistent unreasonable action she had taken.

Perhaps Matifa herself doesn't notice it either./ No, she noticed but she looked away. That's why it has become an inconsistent thing.

Misha had finally transmitted her smile of joy as she looks at me who arrived at the answer.

「That's right, that is Matifa-sama」

「You, you did know this before?」

「I haven't heard it, I noticed it. I knew it by looking at Matifa-sama」

Misha answered easily but, who can struggle against that outrageous witch to arrive to this answer? Misha is much wiser than I thought.

Though I doubted that she can read my mind before, but now I'm convinced that she really can read my mind. It's not a magic trick, with her strange perception, she can analyze a human heart.

Surely, this is why Matifa liked Misha. Maybe, she's expecting this to happen so she gave me Misha.

「If it's Master, you can do it. You'll definitely help Matifa-sama」

「Yeah, I don't feel like losing against her anymore. It's all thanks to Misha. Thanks」

「Ehehe... Was Misha useful?」

「Yeah, very. Misha did well」

I praised the happy Misha while patting her head. it seems that I'm finally able to move my body. Just a bit more and I'll go to Matifa's place. But, before that...

「A reward is necessary for Misha. Do you want something?」

A reward is necessary for an excellent slave. I'll give whatever she want right now. If she wants half of the world, I'd go down and kneel in front of Maou.

I had those thoughts while waiting for her answer, Misha had her glance fleeting between my groins.

「You see, Misha, wants to do naughty things with Master」

「Ha?」

Misha suddenly started pleading.

「Are you sure? We did it this morning. I can give it to you anytime though」

「Un, because Master hadn't properly done ecchi with Misha. 2 Misha, doesn't want to be defeated by Lilith-chi and Matifa!」

Misha shows her willingness with a clenched fist. Certainly, Misha is always just an extra to Matifa and Lilith, I hadn't made her as a proper partner yet.

Misha can't settle with it.

I see, Is that so? If that's the case, then it can't be helped.

「Okay, Misha, Strip. You'll be my partner in front of Matifa」

「Un!」

The one in my groins covered by my pants went mad and I faced Misha declaring so.

Chapter 44: Misha's anal experience

「Misha's first time was here too」

「Un, Master was too intense」

「My bad for being rough that time. Did it hurt?」

「It's fine. It's fine as long as Master feels good」

Misha and I embrace each other naked.

I think it's bad to use Matifa's bed without permission but it's her fault this happened. Even if she sees this, that girl won't do anything to hinder us. If so, then we'll show our love-love place to that witch.

「Misha is really cute. I love you」

「N, Misha loves master too.1 I love you2」

「I do love you too」

Confirming each other's love, we French kissed. The tongues entwine with each other, we exchange our saliva and drink it up. The surroundings of our mouth is already sticky, I and Misha kissed over and over again.

Misha understood me in the truest sense and helped me. There was no one who was able to understand me up until now, but Misha is different from them. She's an irreplaceable partner.

「Misha, I've always suspected you as Matifa's tool. But, it was not at all. My bad」

「Uun3, It's fine. Misha knew that. Also, it's natural to doubt」

Misha accepted my apology and forgave me easily. She's really a good girl4 She's too good for me.

「Thanks, Misha. I'm going to do you affectionately today」

「Un, Misha will do her best」

Then, we kissed again. The warmth of Misha's chest comes through. It's too lovely it's irresistible.

Is Misha glad? Her tail is coiling around my waist. It seems that she doesn't want to let me go.

I embraced her back gently while kissing. Both skins are glued together, I can feel all of Misha's warmth and pulse. Misha also happily clings to me.

「Master, you see, Misha loves kisses. Since the first time we kissed when Master gave me the medicine, my heart was throbbing hard」

「I see, is that so? I'm going to give you lots of kisses if that's what you want. You can just ask whatever you want」

「Unn! Master, kiss me」

「Come」

Then, we kissed again. My hand caresses Misha while we kiss.

Misha is developed by Matifa so she can feel it well anywhere. Just gently stroking her spine makes her body react with a twitch. I turned my hand to her round ass and enjoyed the soft flexible feeling.

「Funyaaa, Master, do you like ass?」

「I love any part of you. 5 Ass, breasts, legs, armpits, I love all of it」

「Then, what about Misha's anus?」

Uneasy, Misha proposed anal play. I don't have experience in that either but there's no way I can refuse Misha's request.

「Very well. I'll do anything. But, why anal?」

「You see, since Misha's pussy is small, Master's penis can't get all of itself in. That's why, I thought of entering my anus. Also, I played with it this morning and it was good」

What a pleasant thing you say.

It seems that she's dissatisfied being compared with Lilith, her vagina seems to be smaller. It can't be helped since she's a child, I do like to expand a tight pussy but that explanation won't do I guess.

「Ok, got it. Then I'll lose it firmly. I don't want to damage Misha after

all」

「Un, but Misha is fine?」

Certainly, when I thrust my penis inside Misha it won't be on the degree of it being ripped off or breaking. But, the problem is the feeling. Even I want Misha to feel good, it's my pride as a man.

「Ah, but what about enema?」

「Misha knows it」

Misha got off the bed, she looked for something in the shelf in the wall while shaking her healthy ass. Then a bottle with a suspicious liquid and a syringe was took out.

「That's...」

「I learned it from Matifa-sama. Wait a minute」

Misha said that and disappeared somewhere. She's probably going to put on enema. I can't move my body so I can't help her yet so I waited for her silently.

Misha came back with a refreshed face after a while.

「Thanks for the wait」

「Should we start then?」

I lay down Misha on the bed and raised her waist. I placed a pillow under her waist and brought my face close to the anus⁶.

「Master, is it dirty?」

「It's fine」

I extend my tongue to Misha's anus. I didn't invade it yet, just licking the area and turning it around. The anus who's thin pink colored shut tightly. It had faint bitterness along with the sweet and sour good smell. It's as if it is letting out a pheromone to invite men. While I enjoy the smell that may become a habit, a fine wrinkle expands from her small hole, I licked it deliberately.

「Nyaaa. My ass itches. Master, do it more」

Misha shakes her waist as she's not satisfied. Answering her request, I made my finger crawl in her pussy while licking.

Misha's small pussy closed tightly, blocking my finger's invasion. I stroke her slit gently and made her body open up naturally.

Then, after caressing it for a while, I heard wet sounds from her pussy. When I pushed the meat through with my penetrating finger, her love nectar dripped. I lick her anus further.

「Nyuuuu, Master, you see, whenever Master touches Miisha, my chest goes poka-poka? It feels way better than Matifa-sama, why is it?」

Misha questioned entranced.

「I wonder why? But, isn't doing naughty things with the one you love feels really good?」

「Is that so? Then, Master too?」

「Yeah, I want to do it with Misha so hard that I'm rock hard already」

Saying that, Misha grasped the stiff and erect penis, then she began to stroke it slowly. It's not a movement to make me cum, it's a soft touch as if patting.

'I won't lose', then I attempted to invade Misha's anus. I pushed my finger wet enough with love nectar on her anus, then it was buried little by little.

Then, Misha started to make a strange scream.

「Nyo, o, o, o, o, ooooo!?!」

Misha who had her mouth look like a triangle made a shriek. Her hair and tail stands up at the same time.

「Are you okay?」

「I-m-fi-ne! Something awakened!」

Misha answered as she breaths roughly. I think she resemble a shepherd but I guess it's my imagination.

Misha's anus opened easily, the finger went inside.

In contrast to the hard entrance, the inside feels squishy, soft and nice. Was this washed beautifully? There's no texture of excrement. The clean intestinal wall is loosened slowly.

「Myoooooooo! Master, dashamazhing!!」

In contrast to the time when I fiddled with her tail, she's getting even more aroused with her ass. Misha shook her ass in search for stimulation.

It seems that a second finger will be no problem at all. Misha's ass hole which should be something that takes out keeps swallowing my finger.

The shallow place of her anus had two fingers enter easily. The soft and flabby elasticity feeling is quite fresh.

Then, I piston my finger, unable to bear it, Misha raised a lovely voice and bend her waist back and forth. It's a reaction I've never seen before.

While enjoying that situation for a while, Misha was unable to endure it at last.

「Myoaaaaaaa!! Mashter, More!! Please give me your penis! Faster!!」

Misha used her own hands to spread her anus and begged. It seems that it feels really good.

「Got it, got it. Wait a moment」

I half raised my feet and grind my glans into Misha's vagina hole.

「Master, wrong hole!」8

「I have to wet it first」

I thrust into her pussy just like that. The pussy wetter than ever accepted the penis smoothly. This seem to be fun even more than usual but the completely aroused looks dissatisfied. She protests as she was looking forward from her expanded anus.

I pulled out the penis that's wet enough, then I thrust it into Misha's anus just as she requested. Misha watched the scene with eyes filled with expectation. The glans pushed into her anus.

「Myoooooooooooo!! My ass is spreading!」

「O, Ooo! This is!」

Misha loosened the constrictor and easily accepted the thick penis. When the glans entered, it was easily dragged inside. Passing through the limit of her pussy, it settled to the root without problem. The anus tightens up to the root, the intestines wrap up to the sticky glans. It's a feeling I've never felt before, my waist feels like melting.

「Myowaaa! Amazing! Your penis hits so deep inside! Master, all of it entered Misha! How's it!?!」

Misha asked in unusual high tension. Her eyes are spinning and her consciousness is about to fly. There might even be a dangerous brain substance coming out. I'm also the same.

「Somehow, this feels very strange. It sticks viscously and it's pleasant in itself」

「Misha too! My pussy goes powaa but my ass goes biribiri! Hey, master! Move, Move!」

「Okaay, Master will get to it then!」

Misha is frolic like a child in an amusement park. She's impatient, wanting to feel good I guess. It seems she likes anal.

In response to Misha's request, I slowly pulled out my penis. The penis put in without resistance was pulled out. Finally, it was caught in the cheerfully tightening muscle. That moment, Misha's legs stretched and she screamed.

「Myooooo! Myaaaaaaa! It's getting stiff and bigger! Misha's anus is tearing off!!」

The anus strangling my glans feels good.

The anus wriggles as I pull out my penis then I buried my penis once again. When I spread the intestines that came off the anus, Misha yelled once again.

With the piledriver position, Misha suppressed the back of her knee and

spread her feet wide, she pushed her own ass pussy with her own weight.

「Oooooo! Misham can you see it? Your anus is amazing!」

「Myaaaa! Misha's ass, Mashter I'm going crazy! Misha's turning stupid!!」

「Very well Misha, become stupid! I'll be a fool too!」

「Nyaaa! The same with Mashter! Misha's going to be a fooooooooool!!」

Both I and Misha indulge into pleasure while panting. Misha's healthy anus accepted my piston easily, my penis is attacked in reverse.

I dig into her ass as a payback so I won't lose. Misha's thin stomach is being stirred by my thick penis, she turned over in pleasure.

「Haha! Misha is a pervert for feeling it from her ass!」

「Myaaaa! Because masther is a pervert too! Misha became a pervert-san too, nyaaaa!!」

Misha is sweating oil⁹ in her whole body. The excretion organ accepts a foreign substance, what's normally impossible made her feel abnormally excited from the stimulus.

She's accepting the sexual stimulus from me happily, Misha is feeling pleasure like never before. This broken midareru-sama¹⁰ is enough as a proof.

「Misha, I'm about to cum soon! I'll make your stomach drink lots!」

「Myaaa! I'll drink lots! Masthter, I will drink with my ash!!」

Misha tightened her muscle hard. At the same time, her intestines coiling to absorb the semen first hand.

As if sucking it up, the sperm rise up deep inside.

「Ooooooo! Cumming, Misha! 」

「Come, master!!」

「Cumming!!」

Dopyu! Byururu! Byururururu!

Misha's beautiful ass had a penis stuck deep inside, the semen was dumped inside. At the same time, Misha reached climax with her ass.

「Myaaaaaaaaaaaa!!」

Her pussy blew a tide, Misha face befall. Misha sticks out her tongue while blowing out a tide, it's lasciviously lewd that you won't think she's a child.

When I pulled out my penis from Misha's anus, the semen flowed out from the anus that was left open but the absentminded Misha doesn't mind it.

「Misha, how was anal?」

「Nyaa. It was the best. Masther, let's do it some time again」

Misha has completely fell into anal sex. It wasn't my fault though. I thought of doing it with Seria next time, I borrowed enema tool from Matifa's room.

Now, then, next would be Matifa's capture. I don't intend to lose but I can't be careless. I should brace myself.

*

1. Daisuki.

2. Aishiteru.

3. Uun = No, Un =Yes.

4. Just like Kashima.

5. Lit: I love anywhere.

6. 菊門, this one took me hours to find out lmao.

7. Pleasantly warm.

8. Lit: Not there.

9. I don't know why but it has oil in the raw.

10. Disordered.

Chapter 45: vs Matifa – 1

Matifa kidnapped Seria and she's waiting for me somewhere. I guess it's that place.

The same throne earlier this day. It's the place that triggered the farewell, it's the place Matifa would be attached the most.

I went there together with Misha, a repulsive magical power is showing emitted from the other side, she's waiting for me to come.

I made a strategy guide against Matifa inside my head. I can no longer escape nor hide. 'Fair and square', I opened the door to the throne room.

The rubble that were inside during the battle was removed beautifully, a torn off red carpet and the stone pillar here and there near it.

Then, deeper inside, Matifa arrogantly sits down on the throne which normally is only for the king to seat.

「Hey, you came without running away. I was somehow worried when you didn't come and thought that you would run away from fear」

Adult Matifa overlooked us from above. Though it looks like that composure was regained after sometime but it was only the surface. She's furious inside, it's clearly seen from her magical power.

Next to her is Seria that's been suspended with a chain that extends to the sky. Her skin has a faint blush in it, it seems that she's been raped by Matifa earlier. The amount of love nectar dripping down on her legs tells that.

Thinking what caused it is unnecessary. She vent out her anger as I ignored her and played with Misha.

「You peeped at everything anyway. Listen up and give up already. Then, I'll also forgive what you did during daytime」

I was dying because of Matifa. Matifa almost died because of me too. We're now equal. Seria is the only person involved as a victim. It's the usual. It would've been done with forgive and forget, but I don't care

about it at all.

But, I know that's not the case. As expected, Matifa brought her eyebrows close in irritation.

「You, that attitude is unacceptable. Certainly, this is a trial I imposed to you, but do you think you can get away safely? If you underestimate me that much, then should I get serious too?」

「Then get serious. I don't want to hear an excuse of you not getting serious when you lose after all」

If she's not serious, I'd be troubled instead. The significance of my win will arise if she's beaten when she's serious.

Matifa gets further frustrated to my underestimating attitude.

「Tell me. Where did you gain that confidence?」

「Thanks to Misha. Misha taught me about the true you. Knowing that, I'm not scared anymore. Matifa, do you remember your contract with me?」

I pat Misha's head and she snuggled me gladly. I showed to Matifa our intimacy then Matifa pursued the matter ignoring us.

「I'll present you something in exchange for information?」

That's the contract tying me and Matifa. It's a contract where Matifa gives me something as a compensation for information she doesn't know.

Though I suspect that it was a contract with the devil that time, but actually the devil is the one who contracts with the witch. In short, I'm the demon. I'll let Matifa know that.

「That's right. I'll tell you an exceptional information right now. The compensation is you yourself, Matifa. Are you ready?」

「Information equaling me? There's no such thing as that. Listen, There's nothing that can substitute a value of a person. There's a slave system but It's impossible to buy and sell people in the first place. It's because no one can measure the value of a person!」

Matifa declared confidently. But, she doesn't know the value of information.

Information is usually neglected in this world. An example is the long distance information transmission.

However, depending on the situation, information can steal away people's life, it can also be used to save in reverse. There are times when people's life are changed.

Matifa who studies magic should understand the life of a human but this girl's sense of values has concluded itself. She doesn't the impact of the information brought by others. That's why, she made that contract. It's a contract of a demon.

By the time she made the contract, my victory was confirmed.

That's why, I told Matifa.

「I see. Then, you don't have complains. Listen, this is the first information. You'll be defeated right here and become mine. This is a fixed information in the future」

Proclaiming my victory, Matifa swung her fist and stood up from the throne.

「Could you stop that bullshit!? There's no way I'll accept that uncertain thing! Even the contract is――」

Then, Matifa's words were interrupted.

「What happened to the contract? Isn't it effective?」

Throwing my words to the surprised Matifa, she shook her head in disapproval.

「Foolish! There's no way!!」

「Listen, in my world, information about the future has an absurd value. It doesn't matter whether or not it's true. Even unclear prediction has a value. It's even above oneself. Then, hearing it means that alone would mean your defeat. Do you understand?」

「Don't joke with me! There's no way I'd accept that!」

Matifa is enraged. It seems that she didn't think that information has value.

Matifa has to pay the compensation in consideration to the value of the information given. It would harm the contractor if she didn't pay then the contract itself will be broken. She can't do that as a witch. That's why, Matifa can't kill me unless she paid the price.

The start is a success.

「That's a shame. Contracts are absolute for a witch right? No matter how much you yell, the result would never change」

「Even so! It would be easy to weaken you without killing you! That's why there's no way for me to lose!」

「You'll understand when when it happens. I'll make the play with this. Isn't it too tight for Seria now?」²

I cast my eyes on Seria who's been silent on our exchange since earlier. Though she's looking down, I can understand that she's conscious.

「Fun! Seria, do you want to say something?」

The questioned Seria murmured.

「...As expected」

A small voice of anger shut itself up during the audience. Then, Seria looked up and cried.

「You're really the cause after all! Don't say something so foolish and apologize to Matifa already! Then, release me already!!」

No doubt, she scolded me. She's telling that it's all my fault. I ignored her stupid opinion.

「What? Even Seria thinks I will lose?」

「You might win but in the end you're at fault!? You definitely did something that made her angry. Hurry up and apologize already!」

「...Seria, I'll punish you later」

「Why!？」

Seria completely thinks of me as the bad guy. Certainly, I'm the bad guy but Matifa is also at fault in this case. Nevertheless, she blames only me as the bad guy. I'll be looking forward to later.

I also asked Misha.

「Misha, do you want to say something？」

「Uun, I'm fine. I believe Master」

There's a great difference between these two people. She's obedient and pretty cute.

「I see. Then I'll ask for you assist」

「Un」

When I and Misha nodded to each other, I faced the angry Matifa at the throne.

「Well then, Matifa, should we start？」

I pulled out Master's cursed sword.

Matifa saw the sword when she was pierced earlier, she now spoke curses as provocation.

「Fun! That's a dagger of a national treasure class isn't it? Is that the source of your confidence？」

「This? Very well. I can go through your magic defense」

Showing it off, her face keeps distorting beautifully.

「I know. Combine it with your ability and it's heinous. It's impossible to evade nor defend. But, I prepared some countermeasures」

Saying that, Matifa invoked her magic.

A dark color of magic fills the throne room. The shadow begin to take a shape of a human. The black haze becomes a lump and the outline gradually became clear.

Then, the finished one is the leader of this country. It's a jet black figure

of a person of ministers and knights of this country. The audience during the daytime was reproduced.

The jet black Ortiz sits on the place Matifa was sitting a while ago and it spoke in Matifa's voice.

「This is my double. Where's the real me? You'll never know? This way I'll be able to seal off your movements. It's better not to use invisibility. At that time, an indiscriminate attack enough to not kill you will be released at all directions」

I feel magic identical to Matifa's appearing on each shadows. Their appearance may be different but they're all Matifa's double.

Matifa's double transformed into another. Perhaps, it's not just their appearance that resembles them. The ability should resemble their respective originals.

「Can you see it Misha?」

「Uun, the smell and sound is all Matifa-sama. The difference is only the appearance. 」

It seems that Misha can't distinguish the real one. But, Misha and I am not worried. We looked at each other and nodded. We were able to understand each others thoughts with just that. Destroy everything.

I and Misha took posture then Matifa handed down a question.

「Can you know where's the real me? Can you find the real me before you fall? If so, I'll return Seria to you」

It seems that Matifa hadn't recognized me as enemy yet. This is a trial Matifa imposed to me or so she said. She's underestimating me in all respects.

「Don't say such a half hearted thing. Come at me seriously」

「You're really conceited. There's no need for me to get serious at you. It's the same thing to Misha. You'll never be able to match me」

「I see. Then I'll make you do it by force. 」

「Un, Matifa-sama, get ready」

Then, I and Misha and Matifa started the battle.

Chapter 46: vs Matifa – 2

It was Lion's copy that moved first. He thrusts his dark colored sword straight to me.

「Do you intend to repeat what happened during daytime?」

「That's right. How will you overcome the crisis from daytime this time around?」

Fake Lion speaks with Matifa's voice. The speed is equal to Lion, I also evaded it with my flight ability just like in daytime.

Fake Lion's sword cuts air. Not just the speed but the movement is identical too. I'm amazed that just a double can reproduce such absurd strength.

However, I experienced this battle once. And thus, it won't be the same this time.

「There's no need to overcome it. There's no way I'd lose against a fake after all!」

When I shoved my dagger, it was avoided splendidly. But, that movement was seen already. I adjusted my track according to his evasion and slashed fake Lion's head.

It's spouting blood.

I shouldn't bathe in this. This has Matifa's magical power soaked in it. Matifa was able to take control of my body easily a while ago, it was because I bathed in Matifa's blood. When I first met Matifa, she manipulated me by sending her magical power to the cursed panties. That's why I would be manipulated the same way from a while ago if I bathed in the blood.

However, it's impossible to evade all the blood. So I had no choice but to be invisible.

Dirt doesn't stick to my invisible body. It's the same thing for blood. The blood that sticks to me fell on the floor. I moved to a position where

it won't stick and removed my invisibility immediately.

If I used it for a long time, a full blown attack will come from Matifa. That's bad.

As soon as I returned back, I was attacked by a light headache.

Taking that advantage, fake Lion attacked with his last struggle.

This is the biggest drawback of my invisibility. My mental state becomes unstable after releasing my invisibility. My thoughts simplify and my judgement becomes dull and I make openings. Therefore, this ability can never be used when I'm alone in battle. That's right, if I'm alone.

「Master, leave it to me!」

The slash was prevented by Misha who cut in. After Misha competed the black sword with her reinforced nails, the attack's orbit changed and flew to the day after tomorrow. It broke a hanging flag and it disappeared at the stone wall.

There will be no problem as long as there's Misha's cooperation. Even if I got defeated by an enemy once, there's no anxiety at all.

「You got down easily. Also, you avoided the blood, did you notice it?」

「Isn't it obvious? You're manipulating me through body fluids. There's no way I'd bathe in it」

Fake Lion talks while bleeding. The doubles don't die even if they're killed, this is really absurd. But, we have to deal with this gap. Any more than this and we can't attack anymore.

「Fun, you seem to have raised a difficulty a bit. Look, it's the next one. Can you endure it now that your movement is dulled?」

Fake Trovas's magic flew next. He shot a black flame arrow that was double than what it was in daytime. It's power is adjusted to the degree where I won't die but if I got it, defeat won't be avoided.

This is also the repetition of the daytime. I flew to the sky and Misha avoided it with her prided speed.

「You'll never win by running away. Or are you analyzing which is the real one?」

Matifa provokes the me who runs away desperately. It seems that she's thinking that she's still in advantage.

If so, I'll respond quickly.

「I do know where the real one is」

「...What did you say?」

This time it was fake Trovas who has a pig face wrapped his face in hate.

While freely flying around the audience, I disclosed my real intention to Matifa.

「Matifa, I guess you're envious of Seria」

「...What are you saying so suddenly?」

「You pressed your panties to me not to tease me. I guess you opposed it when I stole Seria's panties?」

「...」

Matifa didn't answer. Seria made a commotion instead.

「Wait!? What do you mean by that!! You, did you steal my underwear!?」

「Yeah, I just borrowed it. Don't mind it」

「I do! Please return it! RETURN IT!」

Seria is worrying about something so trivial this late, I continued to talk to Matifa.

「Also, you meddled with Seria. You handed her a ero book even though I didn't ask you to, you trespassed and showed yourself when she was having sex with me, in the end you kidnapped her. Other than me, Seria is the only one you put your hand on so far. Even if your favorite is Misha, it's too suspicious」

Seria is special to Matifa. Since I'm obsessed with her, she's burning with rivalry with Seria, but that's not all.

「You're envious of Seria. It's because she has all what you want. But, you hid those feelings. You pretend that you're not aware」

「...What are you talking about?」

Matifa answered feigning ignorance. This girl doesn't admit it yet. Or, she doesn't want to admit it?

Well it's fine, I'm not going to talk long anyway. While I'm speaking in this way, I was exposed to all of attacks. I and Misha avoided with paper thin difference, the audience in between becomes ragged instead. There's no need to increase Lululie's work anymore.

「Matifa, it might be early but I'll give you my answer. I can't use my teleportation for more than once right now. I'll be able to guess your real body in this one use」

Since I used it twice during Seria's masturbation appreciation and when I escape earlier today, I'll be able to use it only once right now.

But, there's no problem with just one chance. I only need to make the correct answer once.

「That's a bluff. There's no way for you to find it that easy. Also, I know that you need time to concentrate to be able to teleport. Do you think I'll give you that time?」

Fake Trovas' attack increased in severity. A black flame arrow spread pursues me and attacked me from all sides. The speed and control is the real deal. If Matifa is serious, Trovas' magical power won't compare to her. It's certain that her magic is the best in this country.

Dodging it to the limit, I brushed off the arrows I can't avoid with the dagger and continued to talk. Although my body hurts from the impossible movement, I need to endure it a bit more. The chance will come certainly.

「It's not a bluff. Also, it's easy to buy time!」

「Is that so? Then let me hear it. Your answer」

「Matifa, you want to be found by me. That's why those irrelevant guys

for you are excluded」

I have to find out the real thing from Matifa's challenge. In other words, she's hoping that I would understand her feelings. I'm sure that she's hiding restlessly right now.

「You have lived for a long time. You stayed at the Kings castle. But, your reason is not to contribute to the country, it's clear because you've never done that so far. You're not fond of this country. You don't eye on the knight or minister in particular. That's why, those are excluded」

「It is. I'm not interested in this country」

The knights and ministers vanished like mist along with my answer.

「Next, Lion. This fellow is the first one who attacked me in the beginning. But, this fellow isn't important to you at all」

「Yeah, Lion is worthless for me」

It's obvious that it wasn't lion from the time of his first slash. This fellow disappeared like mist too.

「Next is Felix. This fellow is a criminal who, just like you, attempted to kidnap Seria. You're eavesdropping anyway, aren't you? If you changed to his shape, then it won't be during the battle during daytime, you should've joined up during Seria's kidnapping situation. That's why, it's not this guy」

「If we returned to Seria's kidnapping, certainly, there's no need to take this measure. You killed 21 people? Then assassins with the same number should've been sent in.

Felix is also one of the two marquis houses, He should've went to Matifa. Though he's the mastermind of Seria's kidnapping, he's unrelated to Matifa right now. Felix disappeared too.

「Though Trovas is also a partner who attacked me but for you, this fellow's magic is just a childish act. This fellow isn't different from the others」

「True. If his face is a bit thin, his value should rise a bit」

The head of the Mark Newt marquis house, Trovas. This guy attacked me with his magic during the daytime, but it goes without saying that Matifa's magic is above that. Even if he disappeared, the magic he shot off didn't. Probably because he's not a practitioner. 2

「The remaining is the royalty and your real self that hides. The second prince Desire is just a simple idiot. There's no way you'd sit there as your pride is high」

「I completely agree. Desire is just a fool」

Desire fades away while striking a strange pose. Matifa seems to hate this fellow.

「The first prince, Radom. He's the guy who came to deal the fatal blow on me. If this trial is to overcome my loss during the daytime, he's the most appropriate. But, the essence of the trial isn't there. It's not this guy」

「That's right. I did thought of knocking down Radom in the trial actually. But, I was angry. There's no way this would end easily」

The fake Radom attacked me without disappearing.

This is probably the trial Matifa originally thought. Defeating Lion, Trovas and Radom, overcoming my defeat during daytime. Therefore, there's power in me, I'm certain that she intends to say that I shouldn't get angry to this degree.

「Misha!」

「Un!」

Misha comes with just one shout. While jumping freely, the fire arrows that were moving to attack were mowed down with her nail. Then, when it reached near me, she increased her speed and all of the fire arrows that were rushing into me dropped. At the same time, I cleaned up those that leaked out of Misha and when the artillery barrage thinned, fake Radom attacked.

If it's not a surprise attack, fake Radom's attack is simple. Though he's

forged along with the knights, he can't defeat me with his conventional movements. The only note to take is his herculean strength that crushed my bones lightly.

Fake Radom jumped in the air. He put up his right fist ready. I shouldn't receive that from here. This cursed sword may not break but the impact would be transmitted to me.

To match Radom's right straight, I rotated my body like a spinning top. Letting Radom's attack flow and having him replace where my body is and I moved to his back. Fake Radom who can't fly can't do this movement. I threw my magic sword and it skewered his heart from behind.

Fake Radom that fell on the ground became mist and disappeared.

「The serious you has no mercy. Though you're not fast, your movement can't be predicted. ...No, it's different. Your movements betrayed my predictions. That's why it felt faster than the original speed. Your flight ability, it's not something that manipulates wind and gravity. The foundation is spatial control, isn't it? Show it to me more」

Even if fake Radom was knocked down, Matifa's composure isn't disturbed. In exchange for the black flame arrow, this time, several small demons were summoned. Their size is estimated as the size of a small man. Big wings grow from their back, they also have a spear with three points.

Their strength is the same from the knights. There's no need to fight so I devote myself to running away again.

Then, I resumed my interrupted answer.

「Next would be the Queen, Angela. Her hysterical point is the same as you」

「You, are you making a fool of me?」

「But, this person is a stranger who just married. A senior like yourself doesn't care about it」

「Are you ignoring me? Well, you're right though」

Matifa erased fake Angela easily. What's left is the shadow of King Ortiz and the Black Matifa.

「Last would be King Ortiz. He's the top of the country but, oh well, it's only to that degree. For you, the throne doesn't matter」

「If so, there's no more candidates. Are you saying that I'm my own double?」

Black Matifa steps ahead.

「Also, there's the guy who hides in the pillar. The me during daytime」

「You noticed it. Certainly, he's hiding there. Is this your answer?」

There's no presence but I'm sure that Matifa's personality won't overlook minor details. In the end, she would just say that the last enemy is myself. But...

「That person is just a fool so leave him alone」

「Isn't that yourself? Then, where am I?」

Matifa asked with irritation and expectation mixed in her voice. This girl really wants me to find her. This girl really has a troublesome character. But, that's cute too.

「You know it already. You already noticed from my answer」

「Then say it already. If you tease me too much, I'll attack you with all members next」

「Ha, you say that but all of them are fake」

「!!」

Matifa's attacking hand stopped for a moment. Finally, the chance appeared.

I'll charge at the real body just like that. I became invisible and sneaked in, I would be attacked if I approached I guess. It's highly possible that I would be attacked to the extent where I won't die. I have no choice but to use teleportation the moment I announce it.

I hang a wire on chandelier and made a sudden break. At the same time, my flight ability is cancelled and my body made a huge swing.

The low-class devils that were following me were left from a distance. Then, earning the time, I activated teleportation.

「The real one is you. You idiot!」

「Ouch!」

I dropped my fist on Seria's seat that has nobody. There's the feeling of feedback on my hand. Then, removing her magic at the same time, the child Matifa that's about to cry showed up.

Chapter 47: vs Matifa – 3

「W-why did you find out that I'm here?」

Asked the Matifa in her usual goth loli appearance. Anger vanished from her face and she returned to her original condition completely.

「It's easy. Actually, you wanted to be a princess, not a witch. That's why you stay at the castle wearing a beautiful dress, you're waiting for a prince to release you from your suffering. There's no other special seat for the princess but here. You wanted to sit down here」

Perhaps, Matifa didn't want to be a witch., After all, she's a girl who keeps admiring the princess in fairy tale. That's the true form of the witch named Matifa.

That's why, in order to save herself, she calls out to find a hero with a special ability at the beginning. It was me this time.

「J-Just that made you convinced that I'm here? Didn't you think that it would be different?」

「In fact, I only thought that it would be here. You're envious of Seria, Seria is the real princess that I've saved. Also, you pushed your own panties to me and embraced me. Also, when you came at Seria's room, you used the other worlder topic as excuse, in truth you can't just watch me meet Seria in silence, aren't you? Also, you want me to embrace you on the bed of the princess and pushed me down. There's also the insinuate to Seria. You even squeezed me to my limit that time」

She feels bitter so she took up my time, she pushed me down forcefully.

She's conscious of all of Seria's actions. She wanted herself to be rescued more than Seria.

However, this fellow isn't docile and can't ask to be saved directly, she did it in a roundabout. She tried to pull me, and tried to make me notice her real intention.

That's why she hid herself, I knew she's here.

Still, Matifa doesn't recognize it yet.

「T-that's too farfetched!」

「Are you still saying that. You entrusted me Misha who's most important to you, you left Misha, the only one who could understand you, to me, you believed that I would understand you didn't you?」

「Wrong! I said it that time, you were weak!」

「That's not wrong. You're a timid girl who dreams to be a princess being saved by a prince. And yet, you took figure of the witch and you hid your weak self desperately. I know everything」

She's really a troublesome woman. In the first place, there's no woman who calls herself with boku.¹ If you change the wording thoroughly, such words isn't used.

「T-then what about it!? Are you saying that you're going to save me!? If you don't have that ability you're just a normal person, are you saying that you can release me from my suffering!?!」

「I can. Since I can, you're attached to me. That's why, it's already fine. Admit your defeat, matifa」

「There's no way I'd admit that! In the first place you don't even know what I'm suffering! That's why you stabbed me to death!!」

Matifa is still whining. It seems she doesn't forgive me for stabbing her.

That's equal to a betrayal for Matifa that wished for salvation. Since Matifa betrayed me before that, I don't mind it anymore, but is lip service needed here?

「You're right. I thought that it's best to put an end to your long life. But, I was wrong. I'll honestly apologize about that. I'm sorry」

「Then what are you going to do? Everyone runs away from knowing they can't kill me. Are you going to run away from me too?」

Matifa asked anxiously. She probably experienced it a lot in the past. She's just a foolish woman for learning nothing from there.

I hugged Matifa and whispered in her ear to reassure her.

「I won't run. Though I'm confident in running away, I won't escape from you anymore. I'll be with you until I die. There's no need to be afraid any longer」

「T-T-T-Then you have to prove it!」

「How?」

「C-Contract! A contract that we'll be together for lifetime!」

「Very well. Look at me, let's do it quickly」

「Are you really sure!? You'll never be run away from me anymore?」

「Didn't I tell you? Hurry up」

Matifa prepared a contract in a hurry. She prepared a cloth of suitable size with magic, she wrote a letter with a quill pen taken out from somewhere. Blood from the fingertip is the ink.

A contract of being together for the lifetime, it's a contract where we can't go away from each other, we always have to meet every after three days, etc, some bothersome lines were written in a row. It's like an oath of a married couple in marriage. Just how unconfident is this girl to make a tie with this contract.

The final drip of blood dropped, Matifa presented the contract to me.

「T-this is a contract of blood. It's the heaviest among witch's contracts. Your life will be taken if you betrayed. Are you really sure?」

「Look」

I also dripped my blood there. And the preparation was complete.

「Got it. Here it comes」

Matifa chanted some sort of magic. Then, when her chant ended, the contract burned up and didn't leave even ash. At the same time, the content of the contract was carved in my mind.

With this, I can no longer run away from Matifa.

And, Matifa can't run away from me—.

「Thus, the completion of the contract. You can no longer part from me. You hear?」

Matifa approached gladly. Our mood is like of newlyweds. She had a man who understands her for the first time, I can see her go round in festivity.

Seria and Misha also had relief in their faces. This girls are really optimistic.

「Very well. We'll be together forever. ...By the way. Matifa, how old are you?」2

The air froze.

It's the number one question you shouldn't ask a woman. Matifa worries about it in particular. Boos and Magic would've flied in an instant. BUt, there's no reaction.

「W-why did you ask such things?」

「Just tell me」

「!...years old」

Matifa answered softly. But, I can't hear it well.

「I can't hear it」

「...1489 years old!」

Matifa shouted in desperation.

1489 years old——This fellow is close to 1500 years old. Her 300 years in this country is just really a part for her. The experience accumulated is unimaginable for me, she must've suffered.

But, that doesn't matter to me anymore.

「Ha, did you live that long? 1489 years?~ ~~1489 you say. Fuuun」

I annoyingly spoke her age in repetition, Matifa's mood worsens in a moment.

「You, what's funny?」

「No, because I guess it is? 1489 years old, if you say that I imagine an old hag. To think that you yearn to be a princess— Pupu」

「You! What do you mean by that? What do you want to do by making me angry this late?」

「I don't intend to make you angry. I was just a bit interested. Haa, Still, 1489 years old~」

「Can you shut up already!?!」

Matifa's face is dyed red as she endure the embarrassment. However, she's already at her limit.

「Ah, Sorry, sorry. Because, thinking that a 1489 years old witch wishing for a prince to help her— I can't stop laughing」

「——!! I told you to shut up!!」

Dark magic spouts from Matifa. It's Matifa's real serious magical power. Bathing in it would be dangerous as it's filled with malice. Though it's sucked in by the cursed sword, it won't last long.

「Are you losing your temper because I'm telling the truth? Or is it bulls-eye? Elderly are really hot-tempered~」

「Stop this bullshit!!」

Matifa's black magic begin to take shape. It's a shadow of an ugly woman. It's size is double of an adult but it's body is as thin like a dead branch. It has a disgusting appearance with it's whole body is entwined with ivy.

Also, it's not just the appearance. A strong thought flows nearby it.

——Envious. Envable. Beauty is enviable. Youth is enviable. Happiness is hated. I want to be beautiful. I want to be young. I want to be popular. I want it to be easy. I want to be happy. Unfair. Unfair. Unfair. Give me beauty. Make me rejuvenate. Don't take the man away. Return the man. Break up happiness. You're just unfair. Hate. I'll curse you. O I curse you. Suffer. Suffer. Suffer suffer suffer. Go mad. Go mad. Go mad go mad go

mad. Break. Break. Break. Die. Die. Drop dead. Go mad and fall to hell—.

The ugly woman screams envy. An ordinary man would go insane hearing it.

This true nature of suffering Matifa is understandable even if it's unpleasant. Matifa had lived up until now burdened with envy of women who's not burdened.

「HI! What's this!?!」

「Mu, Master, that's dangerous!!」

Seria used all her power and fired her magical power to protect herself as she can't move in order to resist. Misha also came down and went to my side.

「Don't worry. Also, Misha, I'll borrow it」

「Mya?」

I removed Misha's choker smoothly. Then, I turned to Matifa once again.

Matifa stared at me with her dark colored pupil. Her face is just as ugly as the monster in the back. It's prominent that it's repulsive because the origin is beautiful.

「Matifa's true character finally showed up. It was easy to trick. Did I look like a prince? There's no way I'd be」

I throw a joke at the enraged Matifa. Whatever kind of monster would appear, my superiority won't change.

「I finally understood your nature. I was foolish. You merely played and teased me. I guess you not being able to use your teleportation is just a lie? Making me angry, you intend to break my mind. Your ways are cowardly. —I don't care, you can kill me right now!!」

Matifa's surrounding has a cursing magical power blowing violently.

I made Misha step back and I confronted Matifa one-on-one.

「Well then, Matifa. I'll say it again. You're defeated by me and you'll be

mine. This is the fixed future. Then, I'll be saving you in the truest sense」

「Don't lie!」

「Your contract can judge whether I lie or not. If you think it's a lie, then attack. You can't right? If I got killed, you can't pay me」

Matifa hadn't paid for the information yet. And her compensation is piled up from the start of the battle.

It's not just the prophecy of Matifa's defeat. Matifa who hadn't noticed the real intention of me sharing information about my ability, I tied Matifa's behavior with various things that became debts.

Furthermore, earlier, we had signed a contract with unclear meaning of us being together as always. It's possible to end this one-sidedly.

「Why!? Why I can't attack!?!」

「I told you right? You can't attack me. In my world there's something called 'A curse will rebound on yourself as well', the curse returned to yourself too. Isn't your contract also one kind of Witch's magic? Since you bound me up, you yourself is also bound. If you think of attacking me, you must pay a compensation first. It's a compensation to get the future you desire」

「Are you telling me to give myself up to you!? There's no way I can do that!」

「It's not about whether you can do it or not. You have no choice but to do it. You're a witch that can't break a contract. And, I already told you the information you wanted the most, the method to save you. No matter how much magical power you summon up, it's the reason for your defeat」

That's right, it concluded from the beginning. What's left is the finishing touches.

「Is there such method to rescue me!?!」

「Well fine. You won't understand it no matter what I say. That's why, I'll do it by force」

I made a step to approach Matifa. The dense magical power's curse can eat a heart. A magical power to curse people with jealousy and envy. My head is attacked and disturbed by an intense headache.

Cold sweat spouts from my whole body and I began to tremble.

Seeing me suffer, Matifa shouted.

「There's no way you can! You do not understand the essence of the thing called magic!!」

「Then tell me. What is this ugly monster?」

「It's an incarnation of jealousy. It's magic distorts the world itself. Uncertain thing, fantasy and delusion, in other words, illusion. It takes form from collective thoughts, it's magical power doesn't have a form from the distortion of the world. If the clear substance and natural phenomenon is used as basis, a realistic phenomenon occurs. Then, if pure emotions gather, an incarnation of divine spirit is born」

What's on Matifa's back is the jealousy of minds all over the world that was born into existence. No doubt it has a suitable ugliness and power.

「I was born beautiful. Furthermore, being the incarnation of the rejuvenation magic and eternal youth, I have gathered the envy all over the world. Then, the incarnation of envy resided in me. This is my source of power and my life enemy. There's no way an ordinary man can do something about it!」

Matifa screamed. A woman who received envy, her heart continued to be ruined. She probably broke in the past. And, Matifa asking for help was born. As she's unable to die, she kept waiting for someone she doesn't know when will appear.

「If you listen to it you'll understand. It's a noisy fellow. Annoying」

「If it's annoying then end it!」

「I'll do. You probably don't know how to deal with envy from those guys. 」

If I know the true character, there would be plenty of ways to deal with

it. Envy receiving praise, laughing it off, ignoring it completely, or being famous around. But, I don't like those methods. Those methods makes you look down on your opponent. To the lowest human, does the lowest method.

「What are you going to do!?!」

「I'll do this」

Then, I covered myself with Matifa's cursed panties.

*

1. I did mention it before, she refers herself with boku, it's usually used by young boys.

Chapter 48: The lowermost worst winner

「Wha! Are you joking with me!?!」

「Wait, what are you wearing!」

「Master?」

The three women raised their voices in astonishment.

Is me wearing panties so surprising? Misha and Matifa had already seen me do this already though.

「I'm not joking. Matifa, I'm going to teach the foolish you how to deal with envy. It'll be clownish. Envy is so absurdly foolish that you became an idiot. So I'll solve it」

Human doesn't envy someone lower than human. Instead, they pity them.

That's a part of it, still, there's some that human envies but most of it is normal hostility. That sort of feeling isn't called envy, and it's not suitable for the incarnation of jealousy.

But, Matifa doesn't understand.

「There's no such thing! I was hurt and I hid my face up until now. But, it doesn't change at all!」

「Well that's true. A blessed person harms himself to attracts someone's attention. Do you think your partner would feel better?」

Matifa surely is likely to do it. Hurting herself, then she'll say 'I'm pitiful' I hate that needless thing.

I walked through her magical power to prove my words. The envy's magical power eats spirit. It made me feel weak. In face I feel that I'm avoided.

「Why!? Why are you still fine!?!」

Matifa shouted. I guess the manifestation of incarnation by magical power is something a human can't stand. Even I am not fine.

If this is a pure hatred and aggressive magical power, I won't be able to hold it. But it's easier for me to endure this magical power as the direction of envy is fixed.

There's nothing in me to be envious about. Also, I originally acted by putting my life on the line. No matter how much envy I received, I won't lose my mind.

「Matifa, it was also like this when we first met, right? You showed of unreasonably and we fooled around. That's fine」

Matifa can't do anything to me who approaches her. Though it's possible for her to manipulate and blow me away on the degree where I won't die, but she can't do it.

She's not just tied by the contract.

Because I who doesn't have magical power endures the magic of envy, she can't help but feel uneasy. Can you really do nothing about this magical power? Expect that there will be.

I will live up to that expectations.

I reached Matifa's front at last, then I made my last verdict to Matifa.

「Then, should Matifa be happy too?」

「W-what are you going to do!?!」

「Become my slave」

Then, I put the choker I removed from Misha a while ago. This has a slave contract. Under normal circumstances, Matifa is only tied by a contract. If I add the slave contract, Matifa would be my cute servant that no longer needs to pay the compensation. She'll be a perverted servant.

Thinking what's after this my face naturally grinned. The magic influenced and made my groin hot.

Ah, I want to rape her soon. I want to enjoy this cute face distorted in shame

「D-Don't come!」

Matifa tries to run away from me but the incarnation from her behind blocks her. Matifa was restricted by a dead branch from her back.

It seems that this guy also wants Matifa to fall. Women's envy is fearful as expected.

「Why!? Why are you obstructing me!!」

Matifa is confused² Being betrayed by her own magic, Matifa has no more cards to play.

Them, I'll be doing it without reserve.

「Hoitto」

「Stooooooooop!!」

I wrapped the choker around the pure white neck of Matifa who can no longer move. A crest erode Matifa's body and rose up, then it disappeared right after. In response to that, the incarnation on her back disappeared along with the clone and the low class demons.

The contract is completed. That Matifa is now really mine.

「Okay! You now belong to the fool's group! How's it? Becoming a slave of a pervert that is covered in panties?」

「It's the worst! Misha, stop this fool!」

Matifa didn't care about her appearance and asked help from Misha. Misha's ears fell flat then she apologized.

「I'm sorry, Matifa-sama. You're mistaken about Misha」

It seems that Misha didn't think of me making Matifa my slave too. But, she doesn't intend to be Matifa's ally. Rather than that, if Matifa is freed, the monster might come out again so she doesn't meddle. Matifa is out of cards already.

The fight is concluded. I certainly won against Matifa. That cheat class Matifa.

My laughter naturally welled up. My body trembles in delight. I shout to my hearts content.

「Fufufu, fuahahahaha! How's it, Matifa!? You became mine just like I predicted! This is my victory! This is my win! Haahahaha!!」

I put both of my hands up high and declared my perfect victory.

If I add Matifa on my subordinates, there's no more person I need to be afraid of in this castle. Even Lion, Matifa can deal with him in one way or another. From this moment, the hidden ruler of this Rasuhairu kingdom's castle changes from Matifa to me, Kirishima Ren! I don't need to act prudent! I'll build my harem here!

「Congratulations Master」

「Ou, I also thank you Misha」

The joy of victory is shared with Misha. Misha really did well. I won because Misha is here.

「Then, what happens next?」

「Isn't that obvious? Feast. Idiots! Shall we begin the feast!?!」

Looking at me laughing in ecstasy, Seria asked anxiously.

「W-what are you going to do?」

Matifa is still tied in chains. It's figure is similar when I took Seria's virginity. Showing such an appearance, then you're going to ask me what I'm going to do?

「Isn't it obvious? It's orgy, Orgy! Rejoice women! I'm inexhaustible today!!」

I can now do Matifa freely. If I put on this perverted panties, if I run out of magical power, I would be supplied with it again. Scars and fatigue of my body doesn't matter. I'm going to fuck you three until I can't move anymore!

Misha who heard my declaration, murmured in amazement.

「Misha is really mistaken. Master isn't just a fool, he's a big fool」

「Misha calmly butt-in the situation! I don't want to be embraced by this man by all means!」

Then, Matifa refused. She finally understood the man called me it seems. Although she fucked me by herself up until now, what a great change happened. This happens if you don't look at your partner properly.

「Ha, too late! Matifa, first order! Suck!」

「Mugu!」

I took out my rock hard penis and thrust it into Matifa's small mouth. She was sucking my semen by herself previously but right now, Matifa refuses me and tries to run away with all her power. But, the contract doesn't allow her to escape.

「N~~~~!! Ngu!! Nooo!!」

Holding the teary-eyed Matifa, I forcibly moved her back and forth. Something like a scream leaks out whenever the glans hit the throat but I ignored it anyway. Matifa secreted saliva regardless of her will, it became slippery gradually. Matifa's small throat tightening my glans up feels good.

「What's wrong, Matifa? You sucked it before right? If you do it like before, you'll be able to drink semen immediately, Hora hora」

My grudge on Matifa accumulated. I'm angry when she dried me up on Seria's room that time. Matifa will never understand my feelings around that time. I'm going to avenge myself right now!

When I violated Matifa's mouth, Seria got angry this time.

「What are you doing!! That's the worst! Please stop that!!」

「I'll do you soon so don't worry. Misha, since you're free, play with Seria. That's right, teach her anal pleasure too」

「Un, got it」

Misha reacted with the word anal. I took out the enema that I took from Matifa's room and sidle it up to Seria.

「Y-You're called Misha-chan? What are you going to do with that?」

「It's fine. It's a pleasurable thing」

「Please wait a moment. Can you remove the chains before that? Hey, please?」

「But. Master, what to do?」

Misha asked me. When I made Matifa my slave, Misha is already freed but she still intends to be my slave. Then my answer is decided.

「Of course, let her stay like that. Other than that, Misha can do what she likes. When it gets dirty, Matifa can clean it」

「Un, got it」

Misha set up the syringe-like tool and turned back to Seria.

「Wait, what are you going to do with that? Hey, can you stop? You shouldn't listen to that kind of person. Hey, wait, hey!? Where are you touching!? That place! Hyaaaaaaa!!」

Misha thrust it in Seria's ass like a child crushing a bug. Seria's screamed at the same time.

「Stop! Something's entering!! Noo! Stoop!!」

「It's Matifa-sama's special magical colorless and odorless liquid so it's fine. There's no need to be ashamed!」

「I don't understand!! What's this!! What are you doing—!!」

Seria doesn't understand the meaning of enema. Her appearance went past pitiable and it's funny. Misha hums as she pour the mysterious liquid inside Seria's ass, she pulled out the syringe happily.

「Endure it. Do your best!」

「Ya, wait, my stomach!」

Gyururururu~ Seria's stomach sounded. Seria tightens up her anus and desperately endured the urge to defecate3.

Misha threw away the contents of the vase that's between the wall from the window, she brought it along with the flag. It seems she's going to use it for disposal.

「Look at it Matifa. That form of Seria. It would be your turn next」

「Nn! Naa! Fuaa, fuaawawofuufuaa!!」

「I don't get what you're talking about」

Every time Matifa tries to say something my penis is tightened up and it feels good. I feel my semen accumulating. There's no need to endure it today. In fact, since there's three people, I have to pound and release it.

I piston Matifa's mouth with the intention of ejaculating from the beginning. Though Matifa doesn't like it, she's made to serve forcibly by the contract. Her throat's interior shuts tight the penis too big for her body, jurururu, she sucked it.

「Very well, Matifa. I'm going to pour it inside your throat directly」

「N~~~!!」

「Oo, coming out!!」

I forcibly made her mouth hold my base at the end then ejaculated in her esophagus. Dopyu, byururu, the semen increased by magic overflows.

The veteran Matifa endured the violent blowjob, she drank a large amount of semen. However, her face is bright red in suffocation, her breath had fallen in disorder.

「Okay, Matifa. Should we go for another round then?」

「Nn~~~~~!!!!!!」

With the penis that doesn't wither, I continued Matifa's blowjob.

Matifa's beautiful face is soiled with tears, she was forced to serve me. It's possible that it's her first time crying. I'm going to cum on that face.

Meanwhile, the condition of Seria's stomach is getting worse. Her tone turned desperate as she asks for help.

「M-Misha-chan. Please. Please cut this chains. My stomach is...」

「Not yet. A bit more」

「I-I'm at my limit already... I beg you, let me go to the toilet」

「No」

It's about to climax there. Misha counts the time while hitting the floor. Seria rubs her feet together desperately. Then, the long waited time came.

「N, it's time. Seria-sama, it's okay」

「It's not okay!! Please cut the chains!」

Misha sets up the vase on the Seria who dislikes it. It's degree of difficulty is too high for the princess who leaked in public. Misha is incredible as she happily force it. As I thought before, this girl is definitely a sadist.

「Seria, take it out. Don't worry, I'll be looking at you properly」

「Please stop it!! Do you think I'll permit such things!?!」

「It's fine. I'm an unforgivable guy that rapes thoroughly. Just like her」

「Fugu! Igiiiiiii!!」

Seeing Matifa having her throat stabbed, Seria raised her voice in protest.

「Stop that! Are you still a human!?!」

「Haha. It's not time to worry if I'm a human. Misha, do it」

「Got it」

When I ordered her, Misha began to attack Seria's anus without mercy. Holding the vase on her one hand, her other hand is grinding against and fiddles Seria's groin.

「Hyawaa! Aaaaa! Ma, hiie, don't! Don't do it!! Aaaaaaaaaa!!」

Seria surrendered to Misha's anal attack. It's really a magical liquid, colorless water spilled from her ass. Processing it is easy.

「Higu...This...can't be...eguu... I can't be a bride anymore!
Uwaaaaaaan!!」

Seria cries. It seems the shock is greater than rape.

Matifa behind her is having a satisfied expression. When Misha finished processing it skillfully, she came here this time. Of course, she's holding the enema. It would look interesting if she wore nurse clothes.

「Next would be Matifa-sama. Let's feel good together」

「Hafuee! Hahihaafuee!!」

「Ou, calm down Matifa」

Matifa tried to resist but, she can't do it anymore as I ordered her. Misha took off Matifa's panties and she thrust in the syringe-type enema on her cute ass.

「Fuoooooooo!!!」

While her mouth is being violated, Misha violate Matifa's ass.

Misha is doing it perfectly with good intentions. This is the outcome of Matifa's distortion education.

「Very well Matifa. I'm going to cum my second time」

「Hafuue! Uguu!!」

Byururu, my semen entered Matifa's mouth again. Matifa pulls out her face in rejection but I hold her down with both of my hands. When I let out everything, I pinched the nose of the refusing Matifa and made her drink it by force.

「Keho, Keho5! You!! Stop this shit!! Misha too!!」

「Don't mind it Misha. Clean it immediately」

「Un」

Though Matifa disagrees, she can't do anything against the power of the enema. Without being able to resist, Misha injected the enema.

「Done」

「Ugu, you guys, remember this. I'll definitely curse and kill you!」

Crawling on all fours, Matifa is bravely holding her stomach. There's also the sound of gyurururu heard in her stomach.

Seria that's a bit far away is crying, Misha began to take off her clothes as it's her turn to enjoy next. I also stripped and the panties on my head remained.

It's a chaotic situation. There's no decent human being here. Although I just put my life on the line a while ago, right now I'm only a wild beast filled with sexual desire.

I reduced the most noble place in this country, disgraced the audience, there's no longer a fragment of solemnity.

I, as the winner of this fight has decided to exhaust myself and overrun this chaotic place.

Chapter 49: Feast

The four of us continued the frenzy.

I forbid Matifa who kept on cursing to use magic and made her endure to the limit.

Still, she doesn't give up, she glared at me with angry eyes. But, that's trivial resistance. Just toying with her a bit and she breaks easily.

Then, I issued an order to the broken Matifa.

「Matifa, can you make a dildo?」

「Is it something like your thing?」

「Guessing it right saves time. That's right, make three」

Matifa still tries to resist but the slave contract tortures her body every time she does. Her urge to defecate already reached the limit. Any more resistance is impossible.

「That's right, also the magic that makes my body sensitive. Use that too」

「Are you a demon?」

「That's right. Just do it」

「Kuh, remember this!」

Matifa used debris marble as material and made a dildo that's not different from my thing. It's delicate finish is artistic.

「Good job. Misha, ease it up」

「Got it」

「Wait, I can handle my own! That's why let me use my magic!」

「Matifa-sama, get refreshed」

「No way――!!」

Matifa screams as Misha made her pee mercilessly. Seria and Matifa's scream reverbs between the audience.

「Good job Misha. Come here, it's your reward. Then do Seria after」

「Got it」

I passed the two dildos to Misha.

「Ah, don't put it inside her anus yet. I'll be the one taking her anal virginity」

「Mu, can't be helped. Then, Master, Misha will insert it」

Saying that, Misha put it in her anus. 'Yare Yare', he thought, the dildo was screwed in there.

「Myooooo! This is amazing, it's ripping!」

「It had such magic. Now go」

「Un!」

Misha held the dildo and returned to Seria. She's jumping up and down, squealing because the dildo would stick in her ass I guess. Misha in high tension is unstoppable. Seria's hardship continues.

I want to do Seria too but today's main dish is Matifa. Although Misha made her leak out, the appearance is completely water. The perfectly clean Matifa lies down on the floor miserably.

I lift one of Matifa's foot and confirmed the condition of her pussy. Not wet nor loose at all. The small young pussy is tightly closed, refusing everyone. As expected, Matifa's obscene part is beautiful.

「Don't look! I don't want to have sex with you anymore!!」

「I don't care. I'm going to do what I want」

Ignoring the teary Matifa's rejection, without reserve, I thrust in my erect penis inside her vagina.

It's the vagina that squeezed semen out of me multiple times up until now, but today's hole is different. Her completely not loose vagina tightens up my double. It stiffens so hard to refuse me, but the resistance was squeezing it instead.

「Higiii!!」

「Haha, what's wrong? If you don't resist even more, all of it will go in!」

Forcibly inserting my penis on the beautiful girl who doesn't want is absurdly arousing. Not to mention my partner is that Matifa. Making a fucking cheat class beautiful girl is the best.

I thought of it before but she's really suited with me in sex. I love the conquest sense by violating a beautiful girl that dislikes it. In that sense, Seria and Matifa fits my taste.

「Guuuu! Stop this! I have no intention to have sex with you!」

「Resist more if you don't want it. Though you can't!」

I ripped off Matifa's goth loli dress roughly. I didn't take it off politely like before.

While sucking on her exposed thin chest, I accelerate the penetration of my hips bit by bit. The vagina that refused me is attacked mercilessly. The resistance makes me fired up instead. I forced my glans to the refusing Matifa's soft flesh and made it slip through inside. Rubbing up her vaginal walls, even she hates it she's getting wet.

「Fuaaa! You, stop, stop this!!」

「Nooope. I'm going even further」

「Haaunn! Ah, Ahn! Aaaa!!」

Matifa's beautiful doll-like face distorts as she endure it desperately. Right now, pain wins against pleasure. But, I don't mind. This witch needs to experience a bit of pain. This is her training as a slave.

I pursuit Matifa further. I pressed the dildo she made a while ago in her small anus and made it slip forcibly.

「Fugiiiiiiii! It hurts! You, wait! You can't do that! That thing won't go in!!」

「It entered Misha so it should be fine. Look, I'm going even faster」

「Stoop! Ouch! Uaaaaaaaaa!!」

Ignoring Matifa's screams, the anus at the center of her snow-white ass

is forcibly opened. It wasn't loosened with a lubricant but it should be all right. She would also experience the pleasure I taught Misha.

Thinking that I made the dildo dig her anus but it doesn't go in easily. The glans part was buried halfway, Matifa's anus is likely to split.

「Uguuuu!! Any further than that is impossible. Give up」

Matifa spun those words in pain.

But, I don't have that character where I would give up at this level. If pushing is impossible then I'll pull it. I weakened the pushing force of the dildo. Matifa felt relieved for a moment. That moment, I forcibly pushed it in one stroke.

「Igtaaaaaaaaaaaaa!! Uaaaaaaaaaaaaa!!」

Matifa faints in agony from too much stimulation. The dildo is buried to the root. But her anus isn't spit apart so it's fine.

「Ah, sorry sorry. My hand slipped」

「Y-You. I won't forgive you. I'll never forgive you!!」

「Ah, well that's fine. Aside from that, how's it? Getting your ass violated feels good right?」

「There's no way I'd feel good! This is just torture!」

「Is that so? But your vagina is already wet though」

Her body is being honest. With the sensitivity increase magic embedded on the dildo, Matifa's vagina began to secrete love nectar. Her countless folds swell and twines around my penis. When I pierce even further, her uterus sticks to it wishing for semen.

「Fuua! Aaa! Ah, you can't! For me to! It's wrong! For me to feel it!! Naaaaa!!!」

Both of Matifa's holes is being attacked. I know the power of this magic well. The pleasure is amplified multipole times that it's like a drug that dissolves your brain. No matter how much you resist, the successive pleasure surging in doesn't allow that.

Even for Matifa, receiving this assault makes her helpless. Her vagina became completely loose, it completely changed to a honey pot that obediently accepts a man's thing. The large amount of love nectar overflows that the dildo and her anus is smeared at the same time.

「Hawaaa! I can't! Don't scrape me so hard!」

Matifa's body twitched. She probably orgasmed lightly.

「You like it with both holes? You want more?」

「No way! This thing! I! Don't know! This makes me strange!! Fuaaaaaa」

Matifa trembled continuously. She's likely to fall in this situation sooner. But, before that...

「I'm going to release my first shot then. Squeeze it tightly」

「Uaaah! Ah! Aaaaaaaa!!」

The two sides of Matifa's small body wears quite a burden. Her vagina with her ass having a dildo being pushed inside feels narrower than usual. I pistoned mercilessly on that tight vagina.

Matifa can no longer resist. Trained to only accept pleasure, Matifa's uterus is being slammed by my glans.

「Naaaaaa!!」

Matifa's back curved as she climaxed. 'Gyuuu', her small vagina tightens my penis pleasantly.

「Cumming!!」

Pushing my glans against her uterus, I released semen on her small womb. Thanks to the peerless panties my semen shows no decline, I vigorously spout it out inside Matifa's womb.

「Aaaaa! It's coming! This man's semen is inside me!! Nooo! Uwaaaaaaa!!」

Matifa repeatedly climax even though she doesn't like it. Her figure falling in disorder is beautiful. To be able to violate this kind of woman as much as I like, it was worth the hardwork.

Releasing all inside, I pulled out my rock hard penis out of Matifa. I plugged the dildo to stop the overflowing semen. Then, I moved my way to the throne and saw Misha completely exhausted.

「What's wrong?」

「Umyaaaa. I was too enthusiactic」

「Haa, Haa, M-Misha-chan, bullied me... Uu...」

It seems that Misha was too frolic. Misha who was sensitive in her ass just became even more sensitive and approached Seria in super high tension. She ignored Seria's protests and thrust it inside her pussy, her breast in front of her shook hard. She rubbed, sucked and massaged the ample breast, she fiddled with her until she was knocked down.

Then, Misha began to pick Seria's anus as she's unable to leave it alone. She also turn up the dildo that's stuck in her anus to pleasure herself, Misha was finally unable to stand and collapsed by herself.

「Misha should rest then. Pull that out from your ass and play with Matifa」

「Nyuu, got it」

Matifa who's gasping and can't move well is on the throne.

Misha took out the dildo from her own ass and inserted it inside Matifa's ass. This girl is really a sadist, she has the same thought circuit as me. Matifa who thought it's finally over had her body jump with the attack on her two holes again.

「Wait, you can't do that! Stop that! 」

「Seria, should you really be worried about other people?」

This girl has a pervert with panties covering his face in front of her but she's still worried about others.

「Because that child aims for the anus so it's dangerous!! If she did that to Matifa-sama, she'll die!! 」

「She won't die. Rather than that, you should worry about yourself」

Seria still remains hung naked. She's now a completely no good princess as she's already accustomed to be seen naked and raped.

「D-Don't come here! I-I won't let you do as you please for today!」

Seria further threatens with magic. But the dildo is still sticking in her crotch.

「I know that's just a bluff. Anyway, you can't move in that state」

Her sensitive body will react if she moves. Doing that makes her magical power scatter easily. The only road left for Seria is to be played by me.

「No way! Why are you doing such a thing!」

「Didn't I tell you before? It's because I want to do it! I can no longer be stopped as I already took down Matifa! I'll also violate you along with Matifa!」

「You're the worst! Are you crazy!?!」

「Yeah, that's right. I'm a genius pervert! I'm being envied by Matifa because I'm cool!」

「That's a lie! Matifa-sama is unrelated, you're just a pervert!!」

Seria trembles as I laugh loudly. I know that Seria is trembling not just because she's frightened. She's trembling as she's enduring the stimulation of the dildo poking her. Sure enough, Seria would forgive me for doing nothing.

「Hyaaun!」

She made a cute scream when I rubbed her breast. Seria can no longer do anything with this. I whispered to her while playing with her completely erect nipples.

「Seria, should we try both sides?」

「Eh? Both? Both you mean, my ass!? Hyaaaaa!!」

When I checked, Seria's anus is loosened well. It's probably because Misha played with it. She's not paying attention and did exploit her anus

by herself.

But oh well, I'll forgive her for the thought that she prepared it for me.

I lift one of her foot, I pushed my penis to her anus that had no problem with finger getting in. It's fairly tight but not to the extent where you can't break through. After passing through her hard anus, her inside is flabby and warm. I'm going to go further in just like that.

「Aaa!! Stop, please stop this!! That's the wrong hole!! Naaa!!」

「What's wrong? Does it feel good?」

「I-I don't know. This sense is first time for me, yaaaaa!!」

Though I tried to surge in violently Seria's anus, it served as a stimulation instead and it became a stimulus.

I repeated the piston selfishly. Shaking my dildo and striking her with the dildo, Seria's vagina is stimulated.

Seria's face is sloppy with embarrassment, pain, and pleasure. Dealing with the amplified sensation it seems she doesn't know what's happening anymore.

But, even though her brain can't process it, her body reacts selfishly. It began to convulse immediately.

「Hyaaa! Aaah! Aa! Aah aaaah! Hyoaaaaa!! aaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaaa!!」

She can't speak anymore. She's a princess cumming like crazy from the penis thrusting in her anus. I showed that appearance to Matifa.

「Matifa, look at this. This is the partner you envied. How's it? You want to be like this?」

Matifa who's gasping from Misha's play answered.

「I-I don't know that! I, don't, want to be a, princess! I no longer want it ! Please stop this already!」

Matifa screamed in grief. Her pride, fantasy and hopes are shattered, what's left is just a girl that was raped. That's the current Matifa. Even if there's someone who would sympathize with her, she'd no longer be

envied.

Seria can somehow deal with the heartbroken Matifa. This fellow has a personality where she can't leave anyone alone. Doing that, Seria herself would be safe too.

The villain me will take all the responsibility.

It's too late for me anyway. No matter how many sins I pile up, it won't matter anymore.

Incidentally, I raped a beautiful girl in addition to that. It's the highest side benefit. There's no way I'd let them go.

This is my solution. This is the worst method made by me.

There's no more need for assassination. I cancel master's request. He might get angry but I won't get killed.

I have a companion named Misha. The number of toys increased to two. The result can't go above this. Tears seems to flow from the sense of achievement.

I thrust inside Seria's anus to express my delight. The urge to ejaculate welled up. I didn't endure it. There's no need to.

「Here I come, Seria! Catch it with your ass pussy!」

「Yaaaaaaaaa!!」

Dopyu! Dopyu! Byurururu!

I throw it out inside Seria's anus. Seria who's mad from cumming can't scream in the end. It seems she already fainted.

When I pulled out my penis, white semen flowed out from her anus that's open loosely. With this, Seria's anal conquest is complete.

I ordered Misha to cut Seria's chains. The released Seria thought she can rest for a bit and took out the dildo and lied down on the floor.

But wait, there's more! It has just started. Relentless lovely voices of women reverb inside the castle of Rasuhairu Kingdom tonight.

1. Lit: But, the feast doesn't end.

Chapter 50: Matifa Epilogue

Matifa P.O.V.

When did I refer to myself with boku?

When I swam into the sea of deep deep memory, it was found immediately. It's natural. It was carved into my heart so it won't disappear.

It was when I crossed 150 years old, I went and set foot from human to a inhuman area.

I was a person that's proud of my magic up to that time. I am the old woman named Matifa who cheated life-span by using magic on my own body, that's the me that time. Just afraid to die, it was a foolish woman who wanted to be saved by somebody.

That wish was granted.

At that time, there's a man who was a prince that spoke gently to the wrinkled me.

「Matifa , I will save you. That's why you mustn't die in a place like this」

I feel in love with a man thoughtless of my age. I want to be with that man, I completed magic that doesn't just prolong life but rejuvenate it too.

The finished magic returned me to my beautiful appearance.

That prince was greatly pleased seeing my former peerless beauty.

Then for a while, I was at cloud nine.

I became the prince's concubine due to the difference in status but, the prince loved me. We walk the streets together, kissed at secret locations, together at the same bed at night.

However, that happiness came to an end before long.

The cause is my magic. I who overcame the absolute life span as a person had my magic rose abnormally and it made a big distortion. It's

not a usual magical power. It's magic that's based on negative emotions, such as hatred and envy.

The voice of resentment rings on my head all the time.

That's envious. Envious. Why only her? It's unfair. Even I. Even I. That's too unfair. I want to mess with her. I want to tear of the skin of her face. I'm going to gouge her eyeballs. I'll replace her. Because of her, he. That girl should just die—.

When I'm researching, when eating, even at sleep, there's not a moment where I feel relaxed. And the one who had it grew the biggest is the prince

I asked for the prince's help. It's painful, I want him to comfort me. The prince was positive about me and said:

「You don't need to think about pain alone. I'll shoulder it the same as you. That's why, teach that rejuvenation magic to me」

Of course I thought that magic. But, the prince was unable to learn that magic. The prince's first degree ability in this country isn't enough.

At that time, I finally noticed the true nature of the burden I'm shouldering. It's my eternal beauty. I was carrying that fate since birth. That's why I was able to learn the rejuvenation magic. Thus, I'm the only one who can practice this magic.

The prince was furious when he found that out. The prince didn't want me but the eternal life. That's why he spoke sweetly to the old woman me who completed that magic. Then, I became beautiful as a bonus. That's right, I was just an extra.

The prince was mad with jealousy. He's already mad since long ago.

The prince tried to kill me when I wasn't useful anymore. It was scary. It was very scary. I was afraid that I would die.

That's why, I turned the tables against the prince. That's utterly disappointing. If I who lived for 150 years get serious on the people on the area, the prince of the country could've died easily.

Thus, I killed my own beloved by my own hand.

That time, I suddenly changed.

The abnormally high magic sublimated to the incarnation of jealousy.

The glossy black hair dyed with a pigment then it became white.

I stopped being a sorcerer and became a witch.

That's when I began to call myself with 'boku'

That was the birth of the witch of supreme time, Matifa.

After that, I lived for years.

Sometimes, a special existence like me is found and I called out to them.
The betrayal of my faint hope of someone saving me continued.

I'm aware that I'm the cause.

After I killed the prince that time, I wasn't able to trust anyone. The more I love or not love the partner, I succumb to the insecurity that they might betray me someday. Then, I tried such a behavior. But, no matter how I try I can't feel relieved, it gets extremely radical. Before long, the party won't be able to endure and run away from me. It repeated over and over again.

Then, I found him.

When I saw him, he was able to fly abnormally like I've never seen before. He doesn't have a magical power at all. In short, he's an existence without any distortion.

He's a completed existence.

I was longing for him. I want to be like him.

But, I don't understand what to do, in the end, I meddled like usual.

He was wonderful.

He has an ability that's not understood. That's why I thought he would run away if I use him just like the others. But, he didn't run away.

He took down Misha who's better than him, he opposed against my

magical power in fear.

Even I injured him, threatened him, raped him, he never surrendered to me.

Then, when I'm with him, I noticed that the voice in my head doesn't sound. The voice of envy that drove me crazy for many years became weak near him. It's perhaps because of his constitution. He already became an irreplaceable existence to me at once.

But, he doesn't look at me. Seria is always first for him.

The princess of Rasahairu Kingdom. A cute, pure, gentle and genuine princess that's different from me.

This time, I'm the one who's envious. I who was always on the other side felt envious.

I always yearned to be a princess since I was a child. The prince always helped the princess in the story. I dreamed to be like that.

Seria has everything I dreamed of.

A genuine princess, she was saved by him on the time of crisis. It seems to be forced but from the outsider's point of view, it was clear that Seria liked him. Furthermore, they share a secret, and he's protecting it. Even though she received so much affection, she wished for even more honestly.

It's impossible for me to not get envious after that.

That's why I no longer asked. I can't forgive him to have Seria's panties so I embarrassingly passed down my panties. When Seria pushed him down like a thieving cat, I bound him on a contract where I would get his secrets. Every time I hear his tales, my heart dances excitedly.

Then, today, I had touched his imperial wrath at last.

He knows that he's weak. However, I'm expecting him to be above by all means. It can't be helped that I thought that he's a special man that can overcome any kind of crisis. And in fact, he made the most influential person of this country and the same time, was able to run away.

‘He’s really the real thing’, the moment I was rejoicing, he stabbed me. I was off guard. He can never run away from me. However, he also doesn’t accept me. Though I understood that this would happen someday, I haven’t considered that It would come.

I remembered the fear of death for the first time after a long while. I remembered the moment when I was betrayed by the prince. ...No, because his blade never reached my body, you can call this as a first time experience. I lost sight of myself as the anger and fear mixed. I left in fury, kidnapped Seria and waited for him. When I think of it, Seria had never done anything wrong.

He spoke about something to Misha while being nursed.

Misha looks at others carefully. She can easily read other’s minds. Misha is the one who understands me the most. That’s why I had her near me, and gave her to him as a present because she’s important.

Misha perfectly saw through the weak me. He was persuaded by that insight. Misha exposed my true nature. It was expected from Misha who’s my hope.

However, it didn’t end there. The two of them started to have sex for some reason. Furthermore, in the ass.

Why do you have room to do such things? Why aren’t you coming to me immediately? The princess is waiting for help you know? And yet, why they can’t leave it like that?

My consciousness returned as there’s no need to look at those two flirting.

The ones occupying the throne room is Me and Seria. Since there’s a barrier around, no one would be aware if something unusual happened.

Seria is confused as she doesn’t understand.

Looking at her made the words of resentment echoed in my head. Why I can’t get my hands on the only thing I want? Why does everyone blame me? Even though she’s the one that should be blamed. I stopped thinking about it. I only involved and disgraced her.

Then, I waited for him.

He was with Misha. Then, he was out of my expectations again this time.

Thinking that he made a declaration of victory with his improvised combination with Misha, I easily made clones of me to turn the tables. I can't catch up processing the speed of Misha's bullshit movement. Even if all of them attacked, Misha would just use substitution. If so, I'm going to take the chance when she's tired. With that said, even if I use full forced attack, the contract will obstruct it. The curse of moving around isn't applied. I showered attack at every direction not giving a room. His prophecy is taking reality.

I only associated with him for several days. Yet, he easily saw through my true nature. He exceeded me. Although he was given advise by Misha, it can't be done normally. He seriously faced me.

And he found me. His fist fell, it hurts much more than the stab earlier. But the pain isn't unpleasant. It's a happy pain that blew away my anger.

I was rejoicing that time. I'm glad that he understands me, I'm glad that he wants to be with me, I was helplessly happy. That's right, I didn't notice his true character up to that moment.

After finishing the contract, he showed his true nature. Of all things, he laughed and ridiculed a person's age. The betrayal was formidable. There's no human that drops after raising this far. Even if there's a little conscience none can do that. He kept speaking happily.

I was furious when I noticed his nature. The incarnation manifested with the intention to kill. But, that resistance was meaningless. My soul was bound by the contract.

Furthermore, he overcame the incarnation of jealousy with the worst method.

He covered his face with panties.

I can't understand it at all. How did you reach that conclusion!? Why can you neutralize the incarnation with that!?

The incarnation of jealousy that tormented me for more than 1000 years doesn't run through him at all. On the contrary, it began to help him.

The incarnation has an ego. However, it never deviated from my control up until now. There's a limit for the bullshit obedience. Is he really a human? Isn't he an actual devil or something?

I don't want to remember what's next.

He dropped me to a slave and he declared his victory. His penis is already erect as the panties is on his head, he made a bad pose of arching his back open stride. It's similar to a pose of a brilliant researcher I guess? Anyway, it's indecent. He's a pervert, no doubt.

Then, I was insulted by that pervert. Forcibly putting his large penis inside my throat, then enema was put on.

I reached climax from the stimulus amplified by magic even though I don't want to.

His penis is too big for my body. Then, each time he stabs my uterus, my urge to cum raise. The vaginal walls are so hot that I might get burned. 'He's sucking my breast so hard that breast milk might come out', I thought as I the violent numbness. Even though I hadn't done it in my ass, it feels so good that I might ascend to heaven.

I can't endure it. Things like grudge or incarnations are nothing compared to this pleasure. My body is no longer mine. I became his.

My body and heart is violated by this pervert.

I hate him definitely. However, I can't go against him anymore. My waist shakes even though I don't want it.

He sits on the throne and made the three girls attend on him.

One person in front of him is being pierced by him to satisfy himself, that's me. The second is kissing him as her breast is being fondled, that's Seria. The third person is Misha who's having her ass played with. All of them are beauties and all of them are his.

Those three people had large amount of semen injected into their front hole and back holes, we came endlessly. Even I and Misha are safe considering the flesh age, it won't be strange if Seria gets pregnant. The princess of the country can't get pregnant selfishly but no one can stop him anymore.

That man talked to me.

「Matifa, how's it? Is the incarnation of jealousy still annoying you?」

The incarnation of jealousy has fallen silent. The moment he buried his hot and robust penis, she became silent inside me. I can feel that it still exists. But, her envy isn't turned to me anymore. There's no woman who would be envious of a woman who became a pervert's plaything. She was envious of the prideful and beautiful witch. This was according to his prediction. It's frustrating that I was saved from that many years of pain.

「Aaaaan! It's already quiet! But, I still don't understand it!」

When I lived for a thousand year, I was unable to do anything against the incarnation, but he was able to put it away somehow.

However, I can't help but think that there must be another method.

For instance, his cursed sword. It's an item that has a power that I never saw before. Can this cursed sword absorb the incarnation's magic completely?

Anyway, that cursed sword might be prepared for that damn woman. If so, his real aim isn't that.

However, it's too late to think about it.

His penis trembles. It ejaculated again. He impregnates my womb with his semen that stinks.

Thinking that, I reached my limit. My body is aching. My womb and vagina pulsates.

「Ora, I'm cumming again!」

「No way! Please stop already!」

「Haha, you're saying that while shaking your hips happily. Look, it's your bonus」

「Naaaaaaaaa!!」

His fingers stimulates my clitoris. It's completely erect and sensitive, I was brought into pleasure unable to resist. My body jumped regardless of my will. A wave of violent climax surge from the bottom of my body, my 1500 years was washed away.

「Cumming!」

Doku Doku, his semen poured in. The empty gap in my heart has his heat flowing in.

That thoughts boils up. It's not just animal passion. It's passion that burns life easily. He threw away all his life and pride for a woman, the battle with no hopes of winning was tackled. Then, it resulted to a victory for some reason.

He's clumsy and a helpless man. I guess I'll never be able to understand him at any circumstances. I lived for 1500 years.

However, that's it.

My master is a helpless fool.

*

1. No, it's not the penis.

Credits

Translator: [Machine Sliced Bread](#)

Epub: [Estevam](#) / [dotNOVEL](#)